

SPIRITS

— *and the* —

SPIRIT UNIVERSE

BOOK 2 OF SPIRITISM
THE SPIRIT WORLD REVEALED
TO AN ANGLICAN VICAR

BRIAN FOSTER

Introduction

The series of books I have written; analyzing and expanding the communications from various groups of spirits to the Rev. G. Vale Owen, are for the express purpose of explaining the reality – the organization, the process, the environment, the progression of spirits, the work, the daily life – of Heaven and the realms below to provide for those interested an understanding of why we are on earth, in our present physical form, and what is waiting for us when our dense shell is cast off and we return to the real world ... the spirit world.

The books by the Rev. G. Vale Owen certainly stand on their own and I recommend anyone interested in further research to read his books. I suggest starting with *Beyond the Veil*, a compilation of four books. G. Vale Owen presented a rich commentary from spirits – starting from his own mother, to spirits who had roamed the higher levels of heaven around the earth to the depths of purgatory.

The information provided is revelatory, amazing, and disconcerting. Our status of independent life forms, living a life shaped by random events, beginning and ending on earth is irrevocably altered by what was exposed. It was to add weight to the view of the spirit realm presented in G. Vale Owen's books that I thought writing my own series of books about his was warranted.

The core reason is that in all of his writings the word Spiritism was never uttered. The word spirituality and spiritualism were used, but the tying back of the communications from the other side to the Doctrine of Spiritism was not expressly made. In the entire set of books, nothing said in the thousands of words brought to him from the spirit realm stood in disagreement to the Doctrine of Spiritism ... in fact they expanded it. Explanations and glimpses into levels of heaven and its processes were all additive. The spirit world was more fully painted as a real working environment.

I firmly believe that G. Vale Owen was a Spiritist in belief, even though he didn't label himself as one. In the era he lived, with the active pushback from organized religion to the concepts of individual spirituality,

reincarnation, and karma may have made a better choice to not make a stand on the Doctrine of Spiritism, or he wasn't aware of the books by Allan Kardec and Leon Denis during the time when the original fervor of Spiritism, spread by the French, had dimmed, and was mainly being revived in the distant shores of Brazil.

In Spiritist literature, published in Brazil, in Portuguese, his name is mentioned. In fact seeing his name in print, alongside a list of Spanish and Portuguese sounding names, who were gathered in the spirit world to help promote Spiritism on earth is what first brought his name to my attention. I had never heard of him before. From that first peek at an incongruent name in a list, I found his books and started my discovery.

In 2016, in a meeting of mediums in a Spiritist center in Rio de Janeiro, my wife and I were told that a spirit would be helping us who was a European; he had tried to spread Spiritists' concepts to America during his physical life and he was now part of a team of spirits who would help the effort to bring the Doctrine of Spiritism to North America. Subsequent communications have solidified my belief that G. Vale Owen is amongst us, assisting this great effort to bring knowledge to the English speaking world about the Third Revelation – Spiritism.

Since his series of books, which were published in the early Twentieth Century, more than four hundred and fifty books have been published in the middle to late 20th Century by the great Brazilian Spiritist medium Francisco (Chico) C. Xavier, all exposing and explaining more about the other side. Other Spiritist authors as well have psychographed (writing down communications from spirits) books; presenting a wealth of information about the unseen spheres around the earth. The vast majority of these have been in Portuguese, and only a fraction has been translated into English. And yet, the information contained in the messages to G. Vale Owen is still pertinent, in that they explore territory and concepts not heretofore mentioned.

Hence, I have taken each message, or group of messages – compared it to other Spiritist literature and attempted to explain what it means to us – here on earth. Earth, where each of us, believes at times that we are alone and cast-off from friends, society, and God. Nothing could be further from the truth.

Organization of Spiritism – As Revealed to an Anglican Vicar

I have taken the complete set of his works and categorized it according to the following classifications.

Heaven and Below – Book 1 of Spiritism as Revealed to an Anglican Vicar – Covers communications that pertain to three main themes:

- Life in heaven
- Lower regions
- Appearances of Jesus in the spirit realm

Spirits and the Spirit Universe - Book 2 of Spiritism as Revealed to an Anglican Vicar – Covers communications that pertain to five main themes:

- Spirit Education – Lower levels of heaven
- Spirit Education – Higher levels of heaven
- Spirit Attributes
- Power of Spirits
- Knowledge of the Universe(s)

How We are Guided by Spirits - Book 3 of Spiritism as Revealed to an Anglican Vicar – Covers communications that pertain to three main themes:

- Guiding humans on earth
- Spirit assistance
- Future events

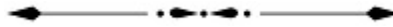
My classifications are not perfect; they overlap at times and cover information that could have been spread to multiple themes. But, I hope they suffice to broadly discuss the subject under which they were placed.

I have also used the numeric designation of the levels of heaven as originally presented in the books by the Rev. G. Vale Owen. The spirits quite plainly state they are using this numbering for convenience only and that other spirits may use other classifications. As an example, in the books psychographed by Francisco (Chico) C. Xavier, I have not detected this same numbering system, only references to higher or lower spheres.

The spirits communicating to G. Vale Owen, spoke about levels one to ten, with the eleventh level as a major dividing line between knowledge and aptitude for a spirit. The eleventh level is regarded as a major graduation point, where the act of creation begins. All levels below are involved in the process of learning and readying oneself.

In each book, I reproduce this introduction and the chapter covering the life of the Rev. G. Vale Owen. I also reused the Glossary and Bibliography. I wanted each to stand independently. Otherwise all content is original in the three books.

In summary, I have endeavored to gather the available Spiritist literature (in English) and combine it with thoughts coming from the spirit realm through G. Vale Owen to illustrate a small section of the vast spirit universe that awaits each one of us.



Spirits and the Spirit Universe – Book 2 of Spiritism as Revealed to an Anglican Vicar



By
Brian Foster



<http://www.nwspiritism.com/>

1st Edition

Table of Contents

[Introduction](#)

[Organization of Spiritism – As Revealed to an Anglican Vicar](#)
[Spirits and the Spirit Universe – Book 2 of Spiritism as Revealed to an Anglican Vicar](#)

[Table of Contents](#)

[The Reverend G. Vale Owen](#)

[Helped by the Spirit World](#)

[The Beginning](#)

[Books by Rev. G. Vale Owen](#)

[The Lowlands of Heaven](#)

[The Highlands of Heaven](#)

[The Ministry of Heaven](#)

[The Battalions of Heaven](#)

The Children of Heaven
The Outlands of Heaven
Paul and Albert
The Kingdom of God
Rev. G. Vale Owen – Life After
Introduction – Spirits and the Spirit Universe – Book 2 of Spiritism as Revealed to an Anglican Vicar
Section 1 – Spirit Education – Lower Levels of Heaven
Chapter 1 – Continuing Education – In the Spirit Realm
A Concert
Chapter 2 – The College of Colors
Spiritism – Presented to us by many Mediums
The Show
Chapter 3 – Love and Wisdom in Balance in the Spirit World
Chapter 4 – Arc of Evolution – All Things Progress
Chapter 5 – Training of the Will – The Spirit World Prepares You to Create With Your Mind
Chapter 6 – In Heaven – You are Taught to Rise Above National Borders, Races, Culture
Chapter 7 – Creating a College City in the 4th Level of Heaven
The Glade is Enlarged
Chapter 8 – The Purpose of Education in the Beginning Levels of Heaven
Section 2 – Spirit Education – Higher Levels of heaven
Chapter 9 – Spiritual World Organization of Education – How Colleges Feed From One to the Next
Instructors
Chapter 10 – High School in Heaven
The Fountain
The Children
Creative Methods
The Unveiling
There is No Sin Here
Chapter 11 – Learning the Creative Science in Heaven – Auras Reutilized
The Problem to be Solved
The Solution
Aura – Logic Encapsulated Within Energy
Reversing the Process

Chapter 12 - Seventh Level of Heaven – Games Children Play

Aerial Flight

Balancing the Ball

Maneuvers in the Air

Chapter 13 - Practice of Meditation and Vision for Young Spirits

Making a Connection

Explanation of the Scene

Plugging into the Universal Knowledge

Chapter 14 - Communication Between Spirits of Different Levels

Chapter 15 - Spirit Families – Helping Each Other Progress

Assistance in the Lower Level of Heaven

Problem Solved

Chapter 16 - To Ascend – We Must Improve in All Areas

Higher Spheres

Chapter 17 - Managing the Evolution of Intelligent Life – Two High Spirits are Sent to a New World

The Ceremony

The Mission

How Life Was Manufactured

How the Two Lead Spirits Were Trained for their Task

Chapter 18 – Higher Education in Heaven – University of the Five Towers

The University

Chapter 19 – To Create One Must Think in Spirals – Education in the 10th Sphere of Heaven

The Theme of the Spiral

The Atom As We Know It

Building Upon the Spiral

The Origin of All

Chapter 20 – Education in the Higher Levels of Heaven

Section 3 – Spirit Attributes

Chapter 21 - Sight and Touch as a Spirit

Chapter 22 – Even Angels of Darkness Become Good Eventually

Chapter 23 – Higher Level of Spirits have a Wider Range of Travel and Sight in the Spirit World

Far Vision

Chapter 24 - Three Methods Spirits Communicate with Each Other

The Universal Language is Thought

Speaking with Aliens – Through Pictures
Sermons by Jesus
Chapter 25 – Spiritual Degrees of Brightness and the Law of Affinity
Like Attracts Like
Chapter 26 – Light in the Physical and Spiritual Spheres
Chapter 27 – Why it is Difficult for Spirits to Remember Names and Dates
Chapter 28 – In the Spirit Realm Appointments to Positions of
Responsibility Comes with More Internal Power
The Governor of Nosso Lar
Chapter 29 – When We Leave This Life We Eventually Become Part of the
Whole – Yet Distinct
Chapter 30 – We are Dynamic Spirits
Section 4 – Power of Spirits
Chapter 31 – Conjuring in the 1st Level of Heaven
Chapter 32 – The Power of a Name in the Spirit World
Chapter 33 – Faith – Not Just for Moving Mountains but to Create Them
What was Presented by Spiritism
Faith
Power of the Spirit World
Teleportation
Creation
Chapter 34 – Angels on Earth
A High Spirit Communicates with Spirits on a Lower Level of Heaven
The Speaker
The Speech
Angels Work for Humankind
Chapter 35 – Transmission of Spiritual Power
Energy = Universal Fluid
Intention
Chapter 36 – Example of Spirit Power – Web of Light
Chapter 37 – Spirit Comrades Meet – Growth at a Different Pace
Chapter 38 – How Spirits Communicate with Us
Continuous Posting
Direct Method of Communication
The Cloud
One More Hypothesis
Chapter 39 – Into the Darkness to Halt Evil

One Example of Containing an Evil Soul
Descent into the Lower Regions
The Dark City
The Exile of the Governor
After the Bloodless Revolution
Chapter 40 – Freeing 144,000 – The City of the Mines in the Lower Levels of the Spirit Realm
Learning On the Job
At the Gates of the City of Mines
Spiritual Superiority
Down into the Mines
Freeing the Prisoners
Out of the Mines
The New Colony
The City Ascends
Chapter 41 – Spiritual Force
Section 5 – Knowledge of the Universe(s)
Chapter 42 – To Rise in Heaven isn't a Journey it's a Transformation
The Process of Transmutation
The Earth too is being Prepared
Transmutation Explains Resurrection
Chapter 43 – Our Physical World is Actually Created by Thought
The Universe Explained
Chapter 44 – Diversity Exists Because God Gave Us Freewill
Freewill – We have to Learn to Control It
It's Not Just the Great Lords Who Create
Uniqueness is All Around Us
Chapter 45 – The Seeds of Astrology - Intersecting Spiritual Spheres Do Influence Earth
Astrology – Modern Thoughts
Spiritual Zones Surrounding the Earth
Spiritual Influence of Other Planet's Spheres
Spiritual Influence from Spheres is Constantly Changing
Stars Do Have Influence
Chapter 46 – Origin of the Species – We (and animals) are Copies of Life in the Spirit World
Man's Place in the Universe

[Chapter 47 – A Glimpse into the Higher Levels of Heaven](#)
[Chapter 48 – Water of Life – Water in the Spirit Realm](#)
[Chapter 49 – Imperfect Beauty Came From Imperfect Construction](#)
[Chapter 50 – Objective to Subjective to Sublime – Our Spiritual Journey.](#)

[The Source of all Free Will](#)

[From Material to Ethereal to Spiritual to Sublime](#)

[Your Life is as You Make It](#)

[Chapter 51 – Useful Knowledge](#)

[Glossary.](#)

[Your Exploration Continues . . .](#)

[Heaven and Below – Book 1](#)

[How we are Guided by Spirits – Book 3](#)

[Spiritism 101 – The Third Revelation](#)

[The Spirit World Talks to Us](#)

[7 Tenets of Spiritism – How They Impact Your Daily Life](#)

[Explore Your Destiny – Since Your Life’s Path is \(mostly\) Predetermined](#)

[The Case for Reincarnation – Your Path to Perfection](#)

[51 Disclosures from Spiritism – The 3rd Revelation](#)

[What Really Happens During Near Death Experiences, According to Spiritism](#)

[The Problem is the Solution](#)

[Spiritism – Everything is Connected](#)

[Author](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Bibliography.](#)



The Reverend G. Vale Owen

The Rev. G. Vale Owen, or G.V.O. to his friends and congregation was a Church of England minister who psychographed messages from spirit world, starting in the 1910s. His works correspond with previous Spiritist writings by Allan Kardec and the future works by Francisco (Chico) C. Xavier. His books revealed many levels of heaven and the life of the spirits around us.

Helped by the Spirit World

One never knows what you will find when reading a Spiritist book. Sometimes I have to read a book twice to find a hidden meaning or a nugget of truth I didn't realize at first. When I see a name mentioned I often look it up, trying to find connections between what spirits say and my world.

I learned about Emanuel Swedenborg when his name was mentioned during a speech by a wise spirit in a lecture in the celestial city of Nossos Lar. It was an exciting personal discovery about a man who preceded Allan Kardec in his revelations about the spirit world. He brought the concept that we are the same after death to the courts of Europe in the 1700s. He introduced many Spiritist precepts before they were codified by Mr. Kardec.

I first heard the name of Rev. G. Vale Owen in an even more circuitous manner. I was sitting in my comfortable armchair reading, when my wife, who was sitting on her chair on the other side of a small table spoke to me about a book she had just finished.

She regularly reviews Spiritist books she had read because there are many only in print in Portuguese. While I can speak the language a little, reading anything more complex than a quick newspaper article is beyond me. Therefore, she discusses any new ideas she has gathered with me.

She was at the end of the book *Voltei*, when she mentioned to me about a party of spirits who were meeting with the spirit author of the book, to let him know he should continue the work for Spiritism that he has had done while in a physical body. My wife read the list of participants, which included Emmanuel, the spirit mentor of Chico Xavier, Andre Luiz, the spirit author of many books, Dr. Bezzara De Menezes, considered to be the father of the Spiritist movement in Brazil.

At first I attempted to ignore her, so I could continue to finish putting my thoughts down on my laptop. She persisted, so I tried to satisfy her with a nod and a grunt. Evidently it wasn't enough, so she put the book in my view and told me to look at the list of invitees.

I quickly glanced at the parade of names and truthfully it was impressive. Many of the spirits who have either been leading the effort to establish Spiritism in Brazil while incarnate, since passed, or in spirit form were in attendance. Most had typical Brazilian names, except the last one; Vale Owen, Rev. G. ^[1]

Spotting that incongruent name intrigued me. Who was this reverend who attended an event with the leading proponents of Spiritism in the spheres above our planet? I dropped what I was doing and searched for his name.

I rapidly found out the basic facts from Wikipedia:

“Vale Owen was born in Birmingham, England, the eldest son of George Owen, a chemist and druggist, and his wife Emma. He was educated at the Midland Institute and Queen's College, Birmingham (a predecessor college of Birmingham University). In 1893 he was ordained by the Bishop of Liverpool as curate in the parish of Seaforth, in Liverpool. He became curate successively at Fairfield in 1895 and St Matthew's, Scotland Road, in 1897, both also in Liverpool. In 1900 he became vicar of Orford, Warrington, where he created a new church, which was built in 1908, and worked there until 1922.

The death of his mother in 1909 awoke his psychic abilities and he began to receive psychic communication in 1913. He received messages via a process known as automatic writing, which can be defined as writing performed without conscious thought or deliberation, typically by means of spontaneous free association or as a medium for spirits or psychic forces.

Given the impact on him of the information he received in this way, he converted to Spiritualism.” ^[2]

He converted to Spiritualism, no mention of Spiritism. While Spiritualism is similar in many respects, Spiritism consistently follows the lead of Allan Kardec in the basic messages. Subsequent Spiritist books are

meant to supplement and provide us more information. Spiritism isn't meant to be static, but a dynamic supply of knowledge from the spirit realm to us, to be parceled out as we advance enough to comprehend the message.

Reading that I decided not to investigate further, since he didn't seem to be in the Spiritist mainstream while on earth. Then I picked up the book *Voltei* again and looked at the front page to see when the book was first written. I found a handwritten inscription from my wife's and I delightful mentor at the Seara Fraterna Spiritist center in Rio de Janeiro. Her name is Juraci and I had learned to follow her advice implicitly, since when I resisted, something always happened to me to get back on track and do what she had politely mentioned.

Over the years I had learned to read the signs given to me from the spirit plane. Seeing the insistence of my wife and the origin of the book, unmistakably told me to push forward and not to cease my research. If you would like to read about my personal experience with spirits guiding my life, it is all in my book, *7 Tenets of Spiritism – How They Impact Your Daily Life* .

The Beginning

Reverend G. Vale Owen (G.V.O. to his friends) was reluctant to believe what he felt coming from the spirit world was true. He tells us:

"There is an opinion abroad that the clergy are very credulous beings. But our training in the exercise of the critical faculty places us among the most hard-to-convince when any new truth is in question. It took a quarter of a century to convince me - ten years that Spirit Communication was a fact, and fifteen that the fact was legitimate and good." [\[3\]](#)

G. Vale Owen contemplated carefully about speaking to spirits. As a Vicar in the Anglican Church comports with the other side is not a regular order of business. However, spirits were busy in sending vibrations to G.V.O. to deliver positive feelings and thoughts so he could make his free-will choice to begin in earnest the job of educating humanity about the life which awaits them after death:

"From the moment I had taken this decision, the answers began to appear. First my wife developed the power of automatic writing. Then through her I received requests that I would sit quietly, pencil in hand, and take down any thoughts which seemed to come into my mind projected there by some eternal personality and not consequence on the exercise of my own mentality. Reluctance lasted a long time, but at last I felt that friends were at hand who wished very earnestly to speak with me. They did not overrule or compel my will in any way - that would have settled the matter at once, so far as I was concerned - but their wishes were made ever more plain." [\[4\]](#)

Once he made his decision to begin psychographing, the process took some time to begin to make sense. G. Vale Owen tells us how he started:

"I felt at last that I ought to give them an opportunity, for I was impressed with the feeling that the influence was a good one, so, at last, very doubtfully, I decided to sit in my cassock in the Vestry after Evensong.

The first four or five messages wandered aimlessly from one subject to another. But gradually the sentences began to take consecutive form, and at last I got some which were understandable. From that time, development kept pace with practice. When the whole series of messages was finished I reckoned up and found that the speed had been maintained at an average of twenty-four words per minute." [\[5\]](#)

When the communications from the spirit realm started, there was no turning back. Reading *The Life Beyond the Veil*, I could feel the urge to proceed to the next and the next message. Each interesting in itself; the whole builds into a narrative of the wonders of life in the spirit world. If I was in Vale Owen's shoes, I doubt that after the first few nights of coherent communications, I could ever stop.

Being a Reverend for a small church in Orford, England brought no great compensation. Even though the money would have been welcomed to help his family, G. Vale Owen refused any payment, just like Chico Xavier did in Brazil.

His ideals in denying himself any monetary gain for automatic writing (Spiritist also use the term psychograph) impressed his fellow countrymen.

An account of it is mentioned by G. Vale Owen's son, the Rev. Eustace Owen, in writing about his father to the Greater World Association:

"In the book HE LAUGHED IN FLEET STREET, Bernard Falk describes a meeting between Lord Northcliffe and my father, in 'The Times' office, when the former asked him to accept £1,000 for publishing extracts from the Script in the 'Weekly Dispatch.' He continues:

'Vale Owen shook his head. For this part of his writings, he said, he could not take any money. He had been well paid by the publicity given him, and by being able to carry out the sacred duty of placing his revelations before the world. Knowing well Vale Owen's poverty I was genuinely sorry to hear him refuse payment, but he was not to be dissuaded...'" [\[6\]](#)

G. Vale Owen knew that if received any money from his efforts he would be accused of falsely creating messages from the spirit world just for the purpose of profit.

Later, in the 1930's the great Brazilian medium Chico Xavier was attacked by many as being one of a large legion of imposters, whose only aim was to increase his personal wealth. Chico said that he could never fall down, since he never stood up, meaning that he couldn't be charged as a person who only wants wealth because he never took money. All proceeds from his books were donated to charity. As a Spiritist, he knew that selling his services that he received as a gift from God is immoral.

Books by Rev. G. Vale Owen

Rev. G. Vale Owen's messages and writing can presently be found in eight books. His first four books were published and then compiled into one edition. Most were published in the 1920s.

1. The Life Beyond the Veil – is composed of the following four books.
 - a. The Lowlands of Heaven
 - b. The Highlands of Heaven
 - c. The Ministry of Heaven

- d. The Battalions of Heaven
2. Outlands of Heaven – which actually contains two books, but were published in one edition.
 - a. The Children of Heaven
 - b. The Outlands of Heaven
3. Paul and Albert
4. The Kingdom of God – which is composed mainly of G. Vale Owen’s interpretation of what the spirit realm communicated to him.

I encourage everyone to read the books by G. Vale Owen, they are fascinating reading and you may have completely different interpretations of what you read than I.

The Lowlands of Heaven

The nightly writings that G. Vale Owen psychographed were first initiated by his deceased mother. She had died on June 8, 1909, at the age of sixty-three. During her life, she had never expressed interest in communicating with spirits.

The first entry in The Lowlands of Heaven is dated Tuesday, September 23, 1913. G.V.O.’s mother describes her home in heaven and her current occupation. Vale Owen asks her what her home is like:

“Earth made perfect. But of course what you call a fourth dimension does not exist here, in a way, and that hinders us in describing it adequately. We have hills and rivers and beautiful forests, and houses, too, and all the work of those who have come before us to make ready. We are at present at work, in our turn, building and ordering for those who must still for a little while continue their battle on earth, and when they come they will find all things ready and the feast prepared.” [\[7\]](#)

Vale Owen’s mother lived in one the first spheres of heaven. This is where souls who have recently died and who are allowed entry into the celestial spheres first arrive. A majority of the work accomplished is the direct assistance of spirits passing from life on earth or to those in the

Lower Zones, or Umbral as the Brazilian Spiritist call it, who require help acclimatizing to the heavenly atmosphere.

The description of life in this sphere has many similarities with descriptions in the Andre Luiz series of books psychographed by Francisco C. Xavier. There is less information about the teams of people who journey to earth to help incarnates. On the other hand there are excursions to other parts of these first levels of heaven which tells us aspects not covered in other published accounts, by other Spiritist mediums.

For example, a series of halls were described, an Orange Hall which contained all permutations of that color, then the Red Hall, which had every hue and gradient of red imaginable. Next Vale Owen's mother told us the purpose of the halls:

“You are wondering to what purpose these building of crystal are put. They are for studying the effect of colors as applied to different departments of life, animal, vegetable and even mineral life, but the two former chiefly, together with clothing. For both the texture and the hue of our garments take their quality from the spiritual state and character of the wearer. Our environment is part of us, just as with you, and light is one component, and an important one, of our environment. Therefore, it is very powerful in its application, under certain conditions, as we saw it in these halls.

I am told the results of those studies are handed on to those who have charge of trees and other plant life on earth and other planets. But there are other results which are too rare in nature for such application to the grosser environment of earth and the other planets, so, of course, only a very small part of these studies is handed on in your direction.” [\[8\]](#)

There is much more information and accounts that tug at your heart as you are led over the landscape of heaven and the rescuing of souls who had lost hope and need direction.

Sir Arthur Conan Doyle, who was a Spiritualist and fervently believed in the afterlife, wrote the introduction to *The Life Beyond the Veil* . Here is a short excerpt:

“And is it subversive of old beliefs? A thousand times No. It broadens them, it defines them, it beautifies them, it fills in the empty voids

which have bewildered us, but save to narrow pedants of the exact word who have lost touch with the spirit, it is infinitely reassuring and illuminating.

How many fleeting phrases of the old Scriptures now take visible shape and meaning?

Do we not begin to understand that “House with many mansions,” And realize Paul’s “House not made with hands,” even as we catch some fleeting glance of that glory which the mind of man has not conceived neither has his tongue spoken?” [\[9\]](#)

As Allan Kardec’s books brought us an understanding of the spirit realm and our place within it, so has Reverend G. Vale Owen’s books presented a picture from a different angle, the same place, the same universe composed of an unimaginable varied landscape and levels. But an account with a different tone more like many of the books which would come after with the advent of the flood of information about ourselves and the spirit world by Chico Xavier.

The Lowlands of Heaven is an account of the love and dedication of the spirit world for us here on earth. It illustrates the enormous effort and organization which is responsible for our chaotic existence on our blue planet.

The Highlands of Heaven

A new narrator takes over, his name is Zabdiel and he resided in the tenth level of heaven. Zabdiel makes it clear that he is using just one method of classification of the many steps of heaven. He quite openly tells us that others have used different words for the hierarchy, but he uses the numbering system since it is simple and direct and easily understood.

Zabdiel takes us on a tour of many levels and the various functions of the higher spheres around our planet. He tells us one of the qualifications for entry:

“This is one of those things which make for difficulty in this life of the spheres. For not until a man has learned to love all without hating any is he able to progress in this land where love means light, and those who do not love move in dim places where they lost their way, and

often become so dull in mind and heart that their perception of the truth is as vague as that of outward things.” [\[10\]](#)

As with other spirits mentioned in Spiritist literature, Zabdiel is involved in helping others ascend. In one of the communications he is sent to help a brother and sister, who live on level ten, but aren't making progress. Zabdiel asks the spirit, Bepel, who knows the background story concerning the couple, why is this so:

“Bepel smiled and replied, ‘You know the man who lives here, he and his sister. They came over from Spheres Eight and Nine some good while ago together. Here they progressed and, from time to time, have returned to the Fourth Sphere, where they have loved ones and, in especial, their parents. This they have done in order to help them onward. Lately they have come to be some little less at their case in these surrounding for the love they bear to those behind. It would seem that these are making their progress very slowly, and it will be long before they reach this estate. These two, therefore, await the coming of someone who has the authority to permit them depart to take up their abode with those they wish to help, in order that their more continual presence should be at the disposal of them to enable them onward.’” [\[11\]](#)

This should serve to give you a flavor of the challenges of higher spirits. Dealing with the complexities of people's desires, even when they are already in a relatively high position, takes wisdom and care for those who may be able to help.

The book also has passages which demonstrate the power of a spirit. How they use their mind to create, instead of manual labor.

The spirit realm, arranged G. Vale Owen to psychograph these important revelations to us, so we can see what is ahead of us and to truly comprehend that any sacrifice we make on earth to be a better person is well rewarded in the spirit world.

The Ministry of Heaven

A new group of spirits present themselves to G.V.O. at the beginning of *The Ministry of Heaven* . The manager of the group is known by the moniker, Leader. Stories similar to what Zabdiel told are presented. The

group employs a spirit, Kathleen, who is closer to G.V.O. in her time spent on earth, so she may organized their thoughts and words in a manner to comport with the use of English at the time.

There is also a long account of a group that is sent on a mission down to the Lower Zone, where they assist those who are undergoing intense suffering. This account is reminiscent of the book, *Liberation* , by the spirit Andre Luiz, psychographed by Francisco (Chico) C. Xavier.

The descriptions of the types of spirits, their physical forms and their attitudes align with what has been reported in Chico's books and Allan Kardec's interviews with poor spirits in their own purgatories in his book *Heaven and Hell* .

The Battalions of Heaven

In the fourth book, Arnel, the spirit who speaks to G. Vale Owen, tells more about life in the tenth level and fully describes a city that encompasses a university. The majesty of Jesus Christ and the angels which surround him is documented in a moving narrative of His manifestation in the main center of the university.

One of the most compelling aspects of this book is the analysis of the power of Jesus and where it comes from. I haven't detected this depth of explanation into the role and the extent of His reach in our part of the galaxy from other Spiritist literature I have read to date.

The Children of Heaven

The Children of Heaven explores the process of training children in the spirit world. The book delves into great detail the methods and techniques for raising children to become full citizens of the spirit realm. The spirits Castrel and Arnel work with G. V. O. in the production of the messages in this book.

The Outlands of Heaven

The Outlands of Heaven has varied stories, one of which reviews life in the third level of heaven. Another long group of passages analyzes the progress of a colony and some of the improvements and education which

transpires in that growing community. There is also a scene about an elevation from the third level of heaven up to the fourth level.

Paul and Albert

The book *Paul and Albert*, is the story of a once selfish surgeon, who, having abused his position for the satisfaction of his own lesser self and often cruel nature, finds himself in an unfamiliar place. [\[12\]](#)

Paul wanders through what he considers Hell and struggles to exist in a dog-eat-dog world where others like him are sent so they may learn what it is like to be treated as they have treated others.

The book is described on the Christian Spiritualism website as:

“The narrative shows by graphically explained example that every action which has been committed must have its consequences, and that such consequences must be faced by the doer of the action. Thus, for example, we see that those who willfully inflicted pain on others are in some cases subjected to having vicious and sickening 'operations' carried out on them by other equally cruel inhabitants who have learned how to control such situations; the pain is really felt, but the spiritual-body merely continues to live on. It is explained that some of the events in those dark conditions are beyond the power of description, and even if it was possible for them to be described, the content would be not be considered suitable by any reputable publisher.” [\[13\]](#)

What we have learned from the book *Liberation*, by Andre Luiz and other accounts of the innate cruelty and depravity of the Lower Zone and the Abyss are all on display in this account.

The Kingdom of God

This book contains many of the Rev. G. Vale Owen's analysis of what he has learned from his communications with various spirits. He explains the concept of God and the science of God. He delves into the verses of the New Testament and how they are explained and expanded by what was brought to him.

Rev. G. Vale Owen – Life After

The first four volumes were a great success and garnered admiration from many who were looking for spiritual guidance. In 1920, the English newspaper, *The Weekly Dispatch*, ran a serialized form of the communications that Mr. Vale Owen received. His books were quite popular.

G. Vale Owen managed to go on a lecture tour in America and the United Kingdom. He gave more than 150 lectures in Great Britain alone. The British newspaper, *The Daily Mail*, described the scene at one of his lectures:

“There were all sorts and conditions of people – clergy-men, Army officers, city men, girl typists, Covent Garden porters, women in working garb, women of leisure, widows in their weeds, laborers in corduroys. These and other types of humanity were all there. When he left the church Mr. Vale Owen was surrounded by men and women who grasped him by both hands. Men bared their heads and a number of women wept. When Mr. Vale Owen freed himself he stood on the steps and the hushed assemblage addressed a few simple words. As he descended the steps hundreds of people again rushed to greet him. It was with the greatest difficulty that his friends, clerical and lay, were able to escort him to the rectory across the road. Thousands of people have written to Mr. Vale Owen congratulating him on his writings. Many people in yesterday’s congregation traveled specially from the north of England, Manchester and Leeds in particular, to hear his address.” ^[14]

The messages of love and the revelation of the extent of the spirits who surround and guide us, was too much for the officials of the Church of England, they removed G. Vale Owen from his parish in 1922. Thereby cutting off all income for G.V.O. and his family.

Only the kindness of Sir Arthur Conan Doyle, who organized a contribution from all of his fans was G. Vale Owen able to live the rest of his life from the proceeds of a trust fund. He died in 1931 at the age of 61.

The Rev. G. Vale Owen provided a great service for humanity. His dedication in working tirelessly every night, while still working as a Vicar

for his church in Orford, is a testament to his love for us all. He began a spark of recognition of the spiritual universe in England. While it may seem to have died out in the heat and passion of World War II, it started a trend line.

The spirit world tells us that progress isn't a straight line but an upward spiral. It must began somewhere. Allan Kardec started Spiritism in France in the 1850's, G.V.O. supplied another curve up in the 1920's. Chico Xavier dramatically boosted the recognition and information about Spiritism starting in the 1930's to the present day.

Hopefully, the writings given to us by Chico Xavier and G.V.O., and other wonderful Spiritist mediums, will spur on another generation to explore Spiritism – to allow us, here on earth, to realize why exactly we are here, going through our lives, full of conflict, pain, and pleasure.



Introduction – Spirits and the Spirit Universe –

Book 2 of Spiritism as Revealed to an Anglican

Vicar

This book covers communications to the Rev. G. Vale Owen that pertain to five main themes:

1. Spirit Education – Lower levels of heaven
2. Spirit Education – Higher levels of heaven
3. Spirit Attributes
4. Power of Spirits
5. Knowledge of the Universe(s)

Imagine a fantasy world where, if you apply yourself, you can travel from sphere to higher sphere, accumulating new attributes and powers after graduating from each level. Nothing could stop you, for there are no limits, promotion is based solely on merit. Within each stage your mind is fully engaged in comprehending the most extraordinary knowledge; all within an atmosphere of supportive and congenial friends. If this sounds like heaven to you, then you are correct – it is heaven.

Heaven is not a lifetime of leisurely activities ... it is an eternity of transformation. It is a career of service, based upon love, in which increased love equates to increased power to help others and to create. From our level and even the base level of the spirits above us – the endgame is unknown. Only the certainty of a path that extends beyond the horizon is fixed.

The system of colleges, the organization of the spheres, the amount of care, mentorship, and guiding hands of higher spirits are all spoken about in the communications from spirits to the Rev. G. Vale Owen. We aren't given a complete encyclopedia by any means, but we are given clues ... tantalizing hints of what is waiting behind the door. The pathway to our life after physical death isn't an ending; it is just the beginning of another challenge.

While on one hand what is revealed is fantastic, it is also expected. How else would heaven be organized? Spiritism tells us that earth is a poor reflection of heaven; therefore think of any large corporation who desires its employees to be trained and to function at ever superior levels. Take the pettiness, the corruption, the politics, the games playing and jockeying for position out of the equation of any large organization and you have an approximation of an organization that is built for success over the long run. Wouldn't that organization wish for each person to attain their optimal level, to have the freedom to produce in any field where they are the most enthralled? And wouldn't you want to be part of that? You can and they take every one who qualifies.

Once we get pass the magical aspect of being a spirit; immortality, thought is action, and the other aspects which lay beyond our experience – the target and aim of heaven is logical and familiar. The objective is training and promoting spirits to position them for areas of responsibility. Four words explain it all – we are in school.

Think of your past time as a student in school. How boring and commonplace it felt; locked in a campus, watched over by administrators who didn't allow you to leave. While you were inside, waiting for the bell to ring, so you could get one step closer to the last period, there was a whole world outside your little bubble – full of exciting challenges and momentous events. All which passed you by as you sat and listened. You couldn't wait to get out of there.

Spiritism presents to you the knowledge of how to set your own pace, to plan your own graduation from the campus of earth. We learn how to handle the hard, easy, and exciting classes. Spiritism supplies the fact that being trained for extraordinary missions in the future isn't boring at all – but just the first step of a long career of exciting journeys.

Learn what is waiting for you. Learn what your life shall be. Learn and gain knowledge, so you may depart this planet forever and embark on a trek throughout the stars.



Section 1 – Spirit Education – Lower Levels of Heaven

When a spirit realizes the importance of serving others, love, charity, fraternity, and honesty, they are allowed into the first levels of heaven. This doesn't mean one has to be a saint, a perfect angel throughout your whole life – only that your predilection is to the good, that you try your best to follow your conscience and be respectful to others. If you have followed the Golden Rule for the majority of your life ... most probably you will rise to heaven.

Once there, living in an atmosphere of beauty and love, you shall not be idle. Unless, you choose to be inactive; in heaven, your free will is always respected.

Heaven is real, it is more than just one place; it encompasses multiple universes. Similar to any location on our planet, it has an organized structure. There are villages, cities, roads, water mains, houses, government buildings, forces to maintain order, and forces to assist. There is everything and more that you would find in any country or city on earth. And there are schools.

Since the time of primitive tribes, children have watched their parents do what they must in order to survive. As the concept of cities grew and work became specialized, learning became a vocation – a required period to gain knowledge of a specific profession. It is the same in the heavenly spheres around our earth. The lower regions of heaven are an extension of our physical life.

Whereas, during our incarnate period, locked into our dense and limited bodies, our time on earth is primarily focused on correcting our faults – our phase in the lower regions of heaven is one of gaining knowledge. Accumulating an understanding of the spirit realm, our place in it, and exploring our potential is paramount during our stay at these junior levels.

Learning is not just classroom, for there are lectures, speeches, exhibits, field trips, and other forms, but also one of doing. Whatever tasks that one

has volunteered for will likewise entail new knowledge gained. All subtlety planned out to grab one's interest and deliver a lesson or two.

As stated before, no one is automatically placed into an institution of learning; the avenues of study and the timing are up to you. The spirit world doesn't pressure you, they entice and seduce you. You will be shown new and greater worlds. High spirits will give talks and explain what they do and amaze you with their experiences. Like one of those rare teachers, who have lived through it all and came back to teach the young, they are full of wisdom and real-life anecdotes which will hold you spell bound.

Allan Kardec, the Codifier of Spiritism, first brought a glimpse of the true heaven to us in the 1850s; since then more and more information has been passed to the earthly plane to Spiritist mediums. The spirit realm, under the leadership of Christ, has determined that the human race is ready to begin to understand their true mission on earth and to comprehend the spheres lying unseen around them.

What was once ill-defined notions of an after-life are now coming into focus. Revealing the organizational structure and the process of continual education in the higher planes is but one more step to prepare the earth for a grand transformation. It is up to each individual to determine how to use the tidings presented by our spirit mentors.



Chapter 1 – Continuing Education – In the Spirit

Realm

The Doctrine of Spiritism first revealed to the world that heaven wasn't a destination of eternal leisure. It wasn't only luxurious gardens to wander around with other angels, strolling aimlessly forever. Instead heaven is a place of work and constant learning.

While those of us who are currently using a physical body to run a marathon of planned trials, all for pushing us onwards for our spiritual growth, others, in spirit form, proceed with their daily tasks of assisting us poor students. A part of spirit life, just as in our lives, is continuing education and training.

When we die, we don't emerge like a butterfly from a cocoon, full of all required knowledge and experts at whatever job we choose. As on earth, we must go to school and learn to become proficient in our intended profession.

In the Reverend Owen's book, which is a collection of four of his books, *Life Beyond the Veil*, in *The Lowlands of Heaven* section, his mother enlightens us about a colony for the expressed purpose of music.

She describes a series of buildings and towers on the shore of a lake. There were gardens and forests extended for miles around. The entire self-contained city was built for the expressed purpose for the manufacture of music and musical instruments. Much like a university town, whose sole reason for being is the college itself.

Rev. G. Vale Owen's mother describes one great building:

“One house – or college, for they were more like colleges than manufactories, when I come to think of it – was devoted to the study of the best methods of conveying musical inspiration to those who had a talent for composition on earth; and another house gave attention rather to those who were clever at playing music, and others to singing, and still others made a special study of ecclesiastical music, and others concert music, and others operatic composition, and so on.” [\[15\]](#)

We aren't only being watched by our spirit mentors to assist us in our personal spiritual growth, but also we are being groomed to higher cultural elevations. As in any good school, students with special talents are encouraged and led to greater heights. Vale Owen's mother describes how the information is sent down to us:

“The results of their studies are tabulated, and there their duty ends. These results are studied again by another class, who consider the best method of communicating them to composers of music generally, and then another body do the actual work of transmission through the veil into the earth sphere. Here are pointed out to them the objects of their endeavors, namely, those who are likely to prove most ready of response to their inspiration. These have been carefully selected by others who are trained in selection of such. All is in perfect order; from the colleges round the lake to the church or concert hall or opera house on earth there is a chain of trained workers who are constantly active in giving to earth some little gift of heavenly music. And that is how all your best music comes to you. ... Yes, you are quite correct. Much of your music is not from us; and much is sullied in its passage. But that is not the fault of the workers from those spheres, but lies at the door of those on your side of the Veil, and those on this side who are of the gloomy regions and to whom the character of the composer gives a foothold to tamper with that which comes from us here.” [\[16\]](#)

I will let the reader determine which type of music and from which composer is divinely inspired. I have read that music in the spirit world is composed of natural sounds, which serve to uplift and calm those who hear it.

The same notion of music being originated in higher spheres and trickling down for our edification is in the passage in the book, *Nosso Lar*, Andre Luiz, the spirit who was rescued from the Lower Zone by the spirit helpers from the first level of heaven, is told:

“Our musicians act in harmony to absorb rays of inspiration from the highest planes, and earth's great composers are sometimes brought to spheres such as ours, where they receive melodic expressions. They then transmit them to human ears, adoring the themes received via their

own genius. The universe, Andre, is full of beauty and sublimity. The eternal and shining spark of life has its origin in God.” [\[17\]](#)

When Vale Owen’s mother talks of “those on this side who are of the gloomy regions”, she is describing the effects of the Lower Zone, or the Umbral as the Brazilian Spiritists call it. The Lower Zone is populated by errant spirits who have not accepted the love and light offered to them.

In the same manner that good spirits work on our minds, by the power of suggestion, ignorant spirits, with ill intentions, attempt to influence our actions. The image of the cartoons, we all watched as children, with the angel on one shoulder telling us to do good, and the devil on the other, telling us to do whatever give us the greater pleasure is actually a reality.

We are on earth to accumulate the necessary wisdom to be impervious to such unscrupulous suggestions. Much like an elementary playground, where the bullies love to tease and harass those who react to their machinations, so do ill-mannered spirits find great pleasure to those who listen. Once, they find their frivolous ideas completely discarded, the fun fades away and so do they.

A Concert

The towers that Vale Owen’s mother alluded to are placed around the lake. When a concert is planned, each college will have selected people rise to the towers and perform their specialty. One type of instruments may be in one tower, others will have different instruments, or vocals of different classes. Some towers also played a part in harmonizing or moderating the volume of the combined effort.

Vale Owen’s mother then describes the concert:

“We were taken to an island in the midst of the lake, and there, in a beautiful scene of trees and grass and flowers and terraces and arbors of trees and little nooks and seats of stone or wood, we heard the festival.

First there came a chord, long and sustained, growing louder and louder, until it seemed to invade the whole landscape and waterscape and every leaf of every tree. It was the key given to the musicians on the various towers. It died into silence and all seemed very still. Then, gradually, we heard the orchestra. It came from many towers, but we

could not tell any single contribution apart. It was perfect harmony, and the balance of tone was exquisite.

Then the singers took up their part. It is of no use for me to try to describe this music of the heavenly spheres in earth language, but I may perhaps be able to give you some idea of the effect. Briefly, it made everything more lovely, not only beautiful, but lovely, too – for there is a difference in meaning of those two words as I use them here. All our faces took on a more lovely hue and expression, the trees became deeper in color, and the atmosphere gradually grew into a vapor of tints like a rainbow. But the vapor did not obscure anything it seemed to bring everything nearer together rather. The water reflected the rainbow tints, and our clothing also became intensified in color. Moreover, the animals and birds about us also responded. One white bird I remember especially. Her beautiful milky white feathers gradually grew brighter, and when I saw her last, before she flew into a grove, she shone like gold burnished and glowing, like transparent light or fire. Then, as the mists slowly faded away, we all became, and everything became, normal once again. But the effect remained, and if I could give it a name, I should say it was ‘peace’”. [\[18\]](#)

Many have described heaven as earth made perfect, we have been given a description of an immaculate musical experience. The concert is but a small peek at what awaits us and why our ordeals are worth the cost to honorably complete.



Chapter 2 – The College of Colors

In the previous chapter, I wrote about a giant complex surrounding a lake in the spirit world. It was on one of the first levels of heaven. In a later series of messages in the Reverend Owen's book, which is a collection of four of his books, *Life Beyond the Veil*, in *The Lowlands of Heaven* section, his mother enlightens us about a great building that served to study color.

She and her group encounter a large building which had a series of domes, pinnacles, and turrets. They were invited in to learn what was happening in that building. From the outside the edifice appeared opaque, but when they walked inside, the walls seemed semi-transparent. As they proceeded, from hall to hall, they found that each was filled with a slightly different shade of a color theme. Each hall had a separate color, with subtle changes of hues on the walls.

Rev. G. Vale Owen's mother describes some of the halls:

“One of these great halls was the Orange Hall, and in it were all the tints of that primary, from the faintest of light gold to the deepest of deep orange. Another was the Red Hall, where hues were ambient all about us, from the faintest rose-leaf pink to the deepest crimson of the rose or dahlia. Another, the Violent Hall, was radiant with hues ranging from the most delicate heliotrope, or amethyst, to the dark rich hue of the pansy. And now I must tell you that there were not only more but several more of these halls devoted to those tints which you do not know, but which you call ultra-violet and the ultra-red, and most wonderful they are.” [\[19\]](#)

Everything is studied and analyzed in the spirit domain. Learning never ceases. Imagine the scope of professions which can be found in the vast spirit universe. If you are a painter or a designer who loves to work with colors, just think of the expanded boundaries you will encounter when you return to the other side.

The research is not only for beauty, but for more, as G. Vale Owen's mother tells us:

“You are wondering to what purpose these buildings of crystal are put. They are for studying the effect of colors as applied to different

departments of life, animal, vegetable and even mineral life, but the two former chiefly, together with clothing. For both the texture and the hue of our garments take their quality from the spiritual state and character of the wearer. Our environment is part of us, just as with you, and light is one component, and an important one, of our environment. Therefore it is very powerful in its applications, under certain conditions, as we saw it in these halls.

I am told that the results of those studies are handed on to those who have charge of trees and other plant life on earth and other planets. But there are other results which are too rare in nature for such application to the grosser environment of earth and the other planets, so, of course, only a very small part of these studies is handed on in your direction.”

[\[20\]](#)

The spirit universe is vast and populated by a multitude of levels of spirits and human-like incarnates, all toiling on diverse planets to become pure spirits. All work together for the betterment of us all.

Keep in mind, we don't detect the life forms around us, they exist on different planes and in different dimensions and in different densities. Our senses and instruments are capable of detecting only a small part of the true environment around us.

Spiritism – Presented to us by many Mediums

The books of communications from the Rev. G. Vale Owen exposes more of the life of spirits. When one has read the series of books by Andre Luiz, in which he chronicles his life in the celestial city of Nosso Lar, one thinks they have learned all there is to know about the first level of heaven. Where in truth, we are but shown a small slice.

For example, in the passage above, Owen's mother speaks about clothing responding to the wearer and their surroundings. When reading *Nosso Lar*, one thinks that people wear regular clothes, yes maybe more tunics, but clothes which do not change. But upon deeper exploration, I found this passage in the book, *In the Realms of Mediumship*, an Andre Luiz book, psychographed by Francisco (Chico) C. Xavier, there is a discussion on thoughts and how they mold the form spirits adopt. When a spirit tells the group:

"Art, as well as science, is much richer in our sphere than in the circle of incarnates, and through art, education is processed more efficiently as far as beauty and culture are concerned. Thus, as we cannot conceive of a dignified and noble earthly society composed solely of men and women in complete nudity - even with fine tattoos - it is necessary to remember that individuals in our community, despite having a vehicle prodigiously sculpted by mental powers, do not disparage fine clothing with which we express different emotions and distinct manners." [\[21\]](#)

Hence, from a book written in the 1920's which never mentions the name Spiritism, but follows its precepts, to a book psychographed by Chico Xavier, who was instructed to always follow the Doctrine of Spiritism, written in 1955, we detect the same culture, the same manners of dress.

Allan Kardec, in the 1850's, told us that the books, the Spirit of Truth presented to us, are just the beginning. As those like me, who lamented the lack of real knowledge about the spirit world, and wished to know with certainty what awaits us, the entire universe has been laid out for us. I had spent so many years searching and not finding anything I could fit into my beliefs, until, way too late in life, I stumbled upon Spiritism.

The amount of literature, which is an on-going endeavor, brought to us by many mediums, is a source of enlightenment and comfort to all. As Spiritism grows, more will finally be able to read about why they are here on earth and understand the need to balance their spiritual and material life.

The Show

The spirit party, with G. Vale Owen's mother, left the buildings and began walking home through the trees. They could still see the domes over the top of the forest. They noticed the domes changed colors. Then they witnessed a light show:

"Then the dome disappeared utterly. Our guide told us it was still there in the same place, but the disappearance was one of the feats they had managed to accomplish by combining certain elements of light from the various halls. Then above the dome and the trees – the dome still being invisible – there appeared an enormous rose of pink, which slowly deepened into crimson, and all among its petals there were beautiful forms of children playing, and men and women standing or walking

and talking together, handsome, beautiful and happy; and fawns and antelopes and birds, running or flitting or lying among the petals, whose shapes swelled like hills and mounds and landscapes. Over these swells ran children with the animals, playing very happily and prettily. And then it all slowly faded away, and all was blank. We were shown several of these displays as we stood there.” [\[22\]](#)

Living in the spirit world in one of the heavenly spheres is to be part of a society that works together in harmony. Where the opportunities to find your dream job are endless. It may not be the eternal leisure that many have envisioned, it is better, it is eternally interesting, eternally enlightening, and above all else personally satisfying. A true Eden.

The prerequisites for entry are simple. Live your life on earth, in a fashion where love, charity, fraternity, and honesty is more important than temporary luxuries bought by fooling or taking advantages of others. You don't have to stay on your knees, reciting the same prayer over and over, hand over all of your assets to some corrupt organization, you don't have to dress or eat a certain diet. You only have to live according to the golden rule.



Chapter 3 – Love and Wisdom in Balance in the Spirit World

The universe is driven by love, but for love to have purpose and direction wisdom is required. To attain wisdom, one must have experience, knowledge, compassion, and harmony within yourself.

The Reverend Owen's mother, who communicated to him in his book, which is a collection of four of his books, *Life Beyond the Veil*, in *The Lowlands of Heaven* section, talks about the synergy of love and wisdom, and its importance in the spirit realm. She tells us:

“One of those things which matter here is that due proportion be meted out between wisdom and love. These are not contrary the one from the other, but are two great phases of one great principle. For love is to wisdom as the tree is to the leaves, and if love actuate and wisdom breathe, then the fruit is healthy and sound.” [\[23\]](#)

She gives an example of when she and four other souls were given a task to journey to a colony and render assistance. First they went to a college where they wanted to inquire about how they should approach the problem.

The spirit group met the Principal of the College. We are told that in his physical life, he had been a diplomat of great ability, but he was not famous. In the spirit world, he was of great countenance; his benevolence and love gave him a glow that would mark him as a high spirit.

He quickly set the small troop at ease. The group explained to him about their mission. After listening for a while, he told them:

“Well, my dear pupils – for so you are good enough to become for a little time – what you have told me is very interesting, and also very general in the work in which you are now engaged. Now, if I were to solve your perplexities you would go back to your work with light hearts, but you would probably find that the solution, when it came to work out, would not be without many flaws in the working, for just those points which are necessary to remember are those little things

which can best be learned by experience; and experience is the only thing which can show you how great these little things are. Come, therefore, with me, and I will teach you what is necessary for you to learn in a better way.” [\[24\]](#)

Whereupon, he lead them on a tour of the gardens. With airy conversation he described the scenery around them, until they crossed a small stream and entered a small Egyptian temple. He instructed the small coterie to sit on benches. Carved on the floor beneath their feet and in the middle of the room was an intricate map. Full of lines and symbols. He then said to them:

“Now, this is a plan of my house and these grounds through which I have led you. Here is marked this little place in which we sit. We have come, as you will see, a considerable distance from the gate where I met you, and you were all talking so much of the pretty things you saw as you came that not one of you gave heed to the direction in which you came. It will be good practice, therefore, and not altogether lacking in pleasure, for you to find your way back again to me, and when you arrive, I shall perhaps be able to give you some help by way of instruction on the difficulties you have stated to me.” [\[25\]](#)

Vale Owen’s mother tell us that when he left, the group looked at each other and all laughed at their combined foolishness. No one had a clue why he had taken them on such a random route through the gardens. Further proof, that when we pass over to the less dense life, we are the same obtuse souls who miss most of the events swirling around us. Oblivious to all except what we focus on as we travel through our daily routine. Thankfully our sense of self depreciating humor survives the separation of the spirit from the physical body.

The group inspected the map. It was full of lines and intersections. They weren’t sure what line led to where. They did see the entire estate was enclosed by a large circular path. They determined if they walked continually outwards, they would meet the circular path. From there they could arrive at their destination by walking along the outer footpath until they encounter the gate where the Principal waited for the group.

The five took off and journeyed a considerable distance. They knew they weren’t able to pick the most efficient route, but they did gain their

destination. The Principal congratulated them on their achievement and proceeded to appraise them of the lesson they acquired:

“First of all, the thing is to make sure of the direction you wish to go; and then the next thing is to take, not the path which seems the shortest, but the one which seems surest to lead you right in the end. That path will not always be the quickest, and may lead you to the borderland where infinity shades off from the realm you know. Still, beyond the border line you are the better able to see both the extent and also the limitation of the estate you are negotiating, and it is only a matter of steadfastness and patience, and the goal you desire is quite sure to be won.” [\[26\]](#)

Within his explanation, one can detect how the spirit world constructs the plans for our lives. We are not built and trained as if we came off an assembly line. Each of us is crafted, with love and care. Our ascent to become a pure spirit is not a straight line, but a complex and spiraling marathon, where we test and enlarge our personal boundaries.

Next he expounds upon the importance of analyzing the whole unit:

“Also, from just beyond the boundary between the local and the infinite, you are able to see that, although it contains within itself paths winding and many, and valleys and groves from which you cannot see very far away, yet that, viewed as a whole, it is perfectly symmetrical – a true circle in fact, which for all the seeming maze and medley within, yet, as a circle, contains within itself a perfect geometrical entity, simple in itself, considered as a unit from the larger, wider point of view; perplexing when passing through its paths inside the boundary line.” [\[27\]](#)

Only by stepping out of the problem, can one grasp it and place it in the correct context. Plus, by identifying the object, the principles of its operation and the scope of its reach may be deduced. The wise spirit explains what this means:

“Also, you noted that, as you followed that curve on its outer side, you were able only to see a little portion of it at one time. Still, knowing that, from its shape, it would lead to the place you sought, you were content to follow on in faith based on reasoned conclusions, and true

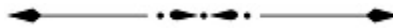
enough, here you are and prove by your presence that your reasoning was, at least in the main, sound.” [\[28\]](#)

Understanding the whole allows certainty when analyzing the parts. This is how we are looked upon by our spirit benefactors. They know us, they know where we are going, where we have been, and they peer into our strengths and weaknesses to place the next level of achievement or to remove a self-inflicted blemish. All built to propel us to perfection, each in our own little way.

One hears a similar method of analysis in the books by the spirit Andre Luiz, psychographed by Francisco (Chico) C. Xavier. Where, in his role to support spirits and incarnates he chances upon numerous in need. In many cases, when Andre sees a soul in distress he wishes to immediately provide comfort and assistance. Invariably, he is told to slow down and analyze the problem. To take the time to learn what has brought the poor soul to their current state and carefully question if any support would actually provide benefit.

The goal of the spirit realm is to lead us to love, a love guided by wisdom. Wisdom is only accumulated by a series of incidents and hard knocks, coupled with our capacity to learn from the skirmishes we must live through in life after life. Hence, our need to not only be born one time in a physical body, where we are the most vulnerable to emotion and pain, but to come back time after time, until the lesson sinks in.

Love and wisdom are what made possible the plan for our lives on earth. Higher spirits, well grounded in knowledge and fraternity for all help fashion our destinies. Someday, when we have accumulated enough acumen, we too, shall play an integral part in people’s lives.



Chapter 4 – Arc of Evolution – All Things

Progress

When we were young, we thought of the animals and the entire world as static. While we knew we would grow older, we thought everything else stayed the same. Mountains didn't move, oceans didn't recede, and humans would always be human.

This is not how it really works. Our own, still evolving science, tells us of the evolution of the planet, plants, and animals. Nothing is ever at rest, there is an innate dynamism at work. Spurred on by interactions, with other plants, animals, solar systems, and even galaxies.

We believe the waves of change are the result of random and chaotic factors. It is not, modifications, down to the smallest detail, are planned and effected by the spirit world. Not by the sudden command by a demigod, but by the manipulation of the particles of the universe. Whether via slow planetary gravitational forces, spiritual waves of thought or slight changes in DNA, the world is being pushed along.

This is all illustrated in the Reverend Owen's book, *Life Beyond the Veil*, which is a collection of four of his books, in *The Lowlands of Heaven* section, where his mother describes to him models of the earth, she found while traveling with a group of spirits.

They happened into a large hall, with representations of different planets, one of them was earth. A caretaker of the hall asked them if they would like a demonstration, whereupon, the model of the earth moved away from the wall and started to change:

“As it approached the center of the space it entered the blue mist and immediately on contact began to enlarge until it became a great sphere glowing with its own light and floating in the blue space. It was exceedingly beautiful. Slowly, very slowly, it revolved on its axis, evidently in the same way the earth does, and we were able to see the oceans and continents. These were flat patterns, like those on the terrestrial globes used on earth. But as it revolved they began to assume a different aspect.

The mountains and hills began to stand out, and the waters to sway and ripple; and presently we saw minute models of the cities, and even details of the building. And still more detailed grew the model of the earth, till we could see the people themselves, first the crowds and at last individuals. This will be hard for you to understand, that on a globe of some, perhaps, eighty to a hundred feet in diameter we were able to see individual men and animals. But that is part of the science of this institution – the enabling of these details being seen individually.

Still more distinct grew these wonderful scenes, and, as the globe revolved, we saw men hurrying about the cities and working in the fields. We saw the wide spaces of prairie and desert and forest and the animals roaming in them. And as the globe slowly circled we saw the oceans and seas, some placid and others tossing and roaring, and here and there a ship. And all the life of earth passed before our eyes.” [\[29\]](#)

The model isn’t just an extremely complex simulation, but a representation of what was occurring at that exact moment on earth. How can this be accomplished? It is done by the constant transmission of every living being on earth of their exact location, thoughts, and actions. In the book, *In the Realms of Mediumship*, psychographed by Francisco (Chico) C. Xavier, we are told how we radiate detailed information:

“Through the sentiments that characterize their inner life, all individuals emit specific rays and live within the spiritual wave with which they identify themselves.

Such truths cannot remain semi-hidden in our sanctuaries of faith; they will radiate from the temples of science like mathematical equations.”

[\[30\]](#)

Hence we all have a unique identification, the same as a RFID (Radio Frequency Identification) chip, which is used to track packages and even help you check out goods from a store. It is a chip with a low level energy transmitter that is attached to each individual good so computer systems will instantly know the location, price, and description of the object.

We are no different. The spirit world tracks and stores our whole life, all of our previous lives, and everyone else who has ever lived. Including all plants and animals. Imagine having a data base of such infinite proportions.

One could play back and forward every event that ever occurred in the history of the earth. And that is what happened next:

“Soon, then, the scenes began to change on the revolving sphere, and we were taken back through the thousands of years of the life of the earth and the generations of men and animals and plant life which had been from the present to the ages when men were just emerging from the forest to settle in colonies on the plains.

Now, I must explain here that history was not followed as historians follow it. These phenomena were not of nations and centuries, but of eons and species. The geologic periods passed before us, and it was intensely interesting to watch what men called the iron age and stone age, the ice age, the floods, and so on. And those of us who understood enough to follow it noticed that these ages were rather arbitrarily names. For the ice age; for example, might correctly describe the state of things in one or two regions of the earth, but there was by no means ice everywhere, as we saw as the sphere revolved. Also we noticed that very frequently one continent was in one age and another continent in another age at the same time. The exhibition ended, however, when the earth was well progressed, and, as I have said, the advent of man was already an accomplished fact.” [\[31\]](#)

The displaying of real life data and being able to rewind, fast forward, or just play at will, allows for general trends, rules, probabilities of events, and many other theories to be either proven or discarded. From this, one could discern the vital variables upon which our life and our society turns.

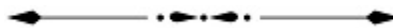
Hence, the spirit world knows full well where the human race has been and where it is going. And they realize the levers to pull to guide us, individually and collectively, to a target state.

Not only on a macro level, but on a micro level this parade of information can be utilized. The progression of a single cell could be traced up to a complete complex animal. Given the derived rules found from the trip up through the evolutionary journey, modifications may be made to the creatures DNA to determine the effects of the change and to the environment around it. We are told as such by G. Vale Owen’s mother:

“Then it was possible to bring over the living model a change, so that it began to evolve backward – or should I say “involve”? – towards its simpler and primal state as a mammal and so on. The whole structural history of the animal was shown in life-like process. And often when the first period of its separate existence as a separate creature was reached, the process was reversed, and it passed through the different stages of development, this time in their correct order and direction, until it became again as it is today. Also it was possible for any student to take charge and continue the development according to his own idea, and this not of the animal alone, but of the heavenly bodies, and also of nations and peoples, which are dealt with in another hall, however, specially adapted to that study.” [\[32\]](#)

Students are not directed to study for no purpose. At some higher level, graduates no longer toil in research but engage in field work. The earth and all of its creatures are part of a grand design. While the methods to get from point A to point B may vary, depending upon the success or failures of previous adjustments, the end is never in doubt.

We are given the chance to grow with the planet and to conform to the idealized form of the better human. Our blue ball in the heavenly sky is being transformed and as such we must individually educate ourselves and modify our behavior to become better souls, more loving, charitable, and honest creatures.



Chapter 5 – Training of the Will – The Spirit

World Prepares You to Create With Your Mind

A high spirit is not only a creature full of immense love and caring, but possesses power to create via their will. The ability to craft new solar systems and life. Command to move planets and stars. When Jesus said that faith can move mountains, he was speaking literally.

Not that spirits temporarily inhabiting our dense physical bodies have that talent on earth at the present time. The skill to conjure, to rearrange the ether around you to become solid and living objects is reserved for those who have climbed a steep ladder of learning. Self-discipline, dedication, love, fraternity, honesty, coolness under fire, intelligence, and knowledge are all prerequisites.

The answer to why there is suffering on earth is clear and reasonable, once you understand the omnipresent control a high spirit has to maintain. No one in their right mind would place a nuclear device in the hands of a child. On the contrary, rigorous training is demanded before a person is allowed to even approach the control of such a device.

In the same way, we on earth, who are in the midst of a process of removing our imperfections by trials are being groomed to one day hold unimaginable authority. Numerous incarnations in our frail bodies, paying off our previous mistakes, learning the correct pathway to love and control of our baser instincts is the road to a level of existence in which mere thought creates all that we desire.

And that is the rub, for our desire, our wishes, our emotions, must be pure and always for the good. Our evil intentions must be wiped clean, never to appear.

The first steps toward training our mind is mentioned in the Reverend Owen's book, *Life Beyond the Veil*, which is a collection of four of his books, in *The Lowlands of Heaven* section, where his mother describes to him the beginnings of learning to create with will power.

The Reverend G. Vale Owen's mother, who resided in the spirit world while she communicated with her son, told him that she and a group came into a large open air pavilion. There was a tablet on a platform in the center.

A spirit demonstrated the primary function of the edifice to the group. He told them to stand around the circular edges of the chamber, while he ascended to the top and to watch what will occur. As the group of acolyte spirits looked up they saw:

“Presently the place took on a different aspect, the air seemed to be changing in color and intensity. And when we looked about us we saw that the landscape had disappeared, and between the pillars there stretched what appeared to be gossamer threads in the form of curtains. They were of various tints all interwoven, and, as we looked round, these seemed to separate into their own colors and then to take on more definite forms. This continued until we found ourselves standing in a glade with the circular belt of tress gently waving in the breeze.

Then the birds began to sing, and we saw their bright plumage, as they flew from one tree to another. Gradually we saw the distance deepen between the trees and could see far into a beautiful forest. The dome was also gone and the sky was above us, except where the tress stretched aloft like a canopy.” [\[33\]](#)

In the pavilion an entire landscape, with accompanying fauna was created. Not an illusion, but a real forest, with real birds. The group heard the voice of the spirit from above telling them to look at the tablet in the middle of the room. They turned their attention away from the spectacular scene and peered upon the tablet:

“We could make little of it at first, but at length one of our party more clever than the rest said that the signs were really representations of the various elements which went to make up the vegetable and animal bodies of the spiritual realms. It is difficult to explain the way in which the connection between the two was apparent to us. But when once pointed out it became quite clear that this was so.

Now our guide joined us once more and explained the use of the building. It seems that before the students are able to progress much in the science of creation as studied in this region, they have to get a

thorough knowledge of the fundamental elements with which they have to deal. This is, of course, quite natural. This building is one of the first where they come to study, and the table, or dial, is a kind of register of these elements on which the student above in the chamber where the controlling instruments are, can see the combination of elements he has brought about, and also the proportion of each element entering into the combination.” [\[34\]](#)

It is as if a child was playing with building blocks, when he or she built objects, the resulting form would be described, the specifications displayed, and the ending composition and the use reported. Thereby, reinforcing the purpose and composition of the creation in the child’s mind.

The entire operation is meant to train the mind. As a student focused his or her will on the object to be formed, the elements she or he conjured together to create mass for the entities are displayed. A feedback loop is utilized to compare what has been fabricated to the composition of the object. With each experiment, the student can refine their focus and the ratios of what elements are required.

Just like, we on earth, take children, and slowly guide them from grade to grade, instilling ever more complex ideas and processes, to one day enable a new generation to play their part in society.

The group of spirits asked what the goal of this training was, they were told:

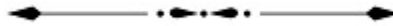
“When the student had become proficient he moved on to another college in this region where another branch of the science was learned, and then had to pass through many more stages of training. The actual use of his knowledge did not fall to his lot until he had passed through many spheres of progress. In the higher of these he was allowed to accompany some great Master, or Archangel, or Power (I do not know the exact and correct title) on one of his missions of service in the Infinite Creation of One Father, and there witness the sublime process at work. It was thought that this might be the creation of some new cosmos or system, either material or spiritual. But that is so high above this state in which we are at present that we have only a general idea of the duties of those High Beings, and it is a matter of a few ages of

progress from here to there, if our ways lie in the direction of that particular system of Heavens.” [\[35\]](#)

Imagine being part of a team that could create a new cosmos. In fact, as I have stated before, we are told in the book, *On the Way to the Light*, by the spirit Emmanuel, how our own solar system was originally created by high spirits, of which Christ was one of the group.

Hence, our planet and the solar system in which we revolve around the sun was fashioned by a group of high spirits. Very high spirits. Every one of the spirits who are responsible for the ground we walk on today started out in a building similar to the one described by G. Vale Owen’s mother. All were fresh pupils at one time, perhaps billions of years ago. All had to endure lifetimes of trials to even be allowed to learn the power of their will.

We are all at that first step. Yes, times are hard for many, tragic episodes will strike us, but all for a purpose. Have faith in the goal ahead and in the care and planning that is allotted to each one of us.



Chapter 6 – In Heaven – You are Taught to Rise

Above National Borders, Races, Culture

First we are told by a group of spirits about a lower level of heaven:

“In Sphere Two the progress of earth-knowledge and intercommunication of peoples are still felt in their development from generation to generation, for the one sphere intervening but little modifies these, and earth-manners of thought and prejudices have still much influence in that sphere, which influence but gradually is neutralized as the spheres are traversed.” ^[36]

The spirit Kathleen, the communicator for a group of advanced spirits, spoke to the [Reverend G. Vale Owen](#) in his book, *Life Beyond the Veil*, which is a collection of four of his books. This particular message was included in *Book Three – The Ministry of Heaven* .

Spiritism notifies us, through the Third Revelation, as codified by [Allan Kardec](#) in the 1850s that we are who we are, even as we pass from life in the physical plane to the spirit plane. Hence, if we were the product of the culture of India, and say for example we thought that Indians were the most superior group of people on the planet, and that our immediate family is of Brahmins, the highest caste, therefore we are the cream of the crop – then we would still have the tendency to believe that as we ascended to a heavenly city above India.

Our thoughts, our social constructs and prejudices are not magically removed as we discard our dense body. The spirit realm doesn't alter our minds through direct control. God absolutely respects our free will and allows us to be as blind and stupid as we so desire. The spirit realm does not attempt to force feed a point of view to us. Instead, they use reason.

And this is precisely what the group of spirits, who came from the tenth level down to the second level of heaven, were trying to accomplish. They came to educate the good souls to rise above all preconceived labels.

Habits of thought are difficult to re-direct, even for those who desire it. Hence, the spirit realm understands the need to calmly present the case for

unity. They tell us:

“Even in those well progressed there linger traces of these things, but not so intensified as to arrest development, nor to mar the Brotherhood of the children of God. They become, these differences of earth-life, varieties of type which add to the interest and charm of such as Sphere Seven and onward, and have no taint of division, nor belittling of others opinions and creeds. Those who have proceeded so far into the light have by that light learned to read the lessons written in the Book of the Acts of God, and there is but one Book for All who speak one tongue and are all one great family of the Father there. Not, as in earth-life, out of mere passive and constrained toleration, but with hearty co-operation in work and in friendship – one in love.” [\[37\]](#)

Therefore, the second sphere was not one of discord or hate, but of habit. The spirits from sphere ten described the current state of sphere two:

“There the people were gathered into groups, as it pleased their choice. Some sought to consort with those of their own race. Other groups were formed of those to whom Creed was of higher appeal than blood. And even political circles were not absent. And those from these groups singly would from time to time attend the assembly of other groups which were to their mind in part. A Moslem would pay a friendly visit to a group of international socialists, or an imperialist would attach himself to those who worshipped God according to the Christian faith. Much diversity was there in the grouping of the people, and much interchange in the composition of the groups. But for the most part they remained and continued in what faith they had ever been, and of what political party and of what blood.” [\[38\]](#)

How normal all this sounds. This is the great revelation of Spiritism – Heaven is accessible by everyone – all that matters is love and kindness in one’s heart. Each soul was drawn, quite naturally, to their own kind, and was considerate and respectful of others. But, they just felt more comfortable with similar people.

To ascend higher, they must learn to feel the same sense of brotherhood to all souls, not just that intimate feeling to a select few. Therefore, the high spirits told the populace in sphere two that they would all come together to hear the same message.

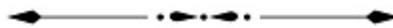
The spirits from the tenth level stood upon a ledge of rock on a high cliff, so the multitude, gathered on the rolling hills below could listen to their message of unity. Here is what they were told:

“Down on the plane of the earth there dwelt one family, which had been divided into many sections, and, seeing the evils of such division, there were many who would confederate them once again. Even in this sphere was to be seen that same stubbornness of pride which said, ‘My race and my creed are more to the Father’s mind than those of others.’ It was for the reason that such must be done away before advance could be free and unimpeded that we had brought them altogether as one family to deliver the message we had from the One Father, through the only Christ.

At this there was some uneasiness among them, but no word was said amiss, for when they saw that our brightness was of luster beyond their own, they gave us heed, knowing that once we thought as they thought now, and that only by the releasing of some of our opinions and the remodeling of others had we come to be brighter of form and countenance than they. So they gave our speaker heed.” [\[39\]](#)

It is as if, high school students were given a lecture by a group of college students on how to survive and prosper in a university. They would instantly recognize the maturity of the college students and would seek to learn from their accumulated wisdom and experience.

Once we leave this life, our education does not end ... it is only the beginning of eternal learning and betterment. Imagine an immortality exploring new ideas, vistas, planets, cultures, and universes. The higher one ascends the wider range of discovery is opened to you.



Chapter 7 – Creating a College City in the 4th

Level of Heaven

There was a colony in the fourth level of heaven. It had grown and now it was ready to take on more responsibilities. The spirit realm decided to make it a hub of newly arriving souls from inferior levels so they could learn how to thrive on stage four and continue to ascend.

The original building and area, called the Glade, that held services and civil functions would be transformed into a college. The college was planned to be more than what a college is on earth. It was also planned to be a place of transition. Souls who have trekked the difficult path up from the Lower Zone, would be able to rest and recuperate, while preparing themselves for the next step.

Arnel told the Rev. G. Vale Owen, about the college and its role in conditioning spirits to their new environment:

“One was to condition the newcomers to the more advanced and refined atmosphere of that district. This was necessary in order that they might feel no discomfort to distract from their studies. This was a large estate with no central building, but little nooks and arbors, and some small dwelling-places where they might rest and find leisure for meditation, or talk, as they should list. James and other helpers went among them, but not very often, and then they spoke with any they should chance to meet. But of set training there was none. The people rested, and did as they had a mind to do.” [\[40\]](#)

Nothing is thrust upon the unwary or unwilling. As is told in Ecclesiastes 3:1; to every thing there is a season, and a time to every purpose under the heaven. No one is hurried, when they are ready, a new door is opened.

As part of the initiation process, there was also a department to teach languages. Language beyond dialects; how to speak in pictures, mind to mind, how to use your native language and the past languages you have learned from previous lives to communicate with others. And to combine methods to achieve accurate translation of thought.

Next Arnel described the Departments of Art and Science:

“Another department was that of the science of the Spheres. Here was taught with precision what they had come at in the rough during their progress through the spheres below. The special constitution of each sphere was explained to them, and also the meaning of those experiences which they had passed through on the way. This done, the Sphere was explained in all its parts, and the powers inherent in their present estate spiritually were explained also.

You are wondering whether Sphere Five was dealt with here. No, my son. Of that more hereafter. The realms in advance of the Fourth were but glimpsed; no more than that.

Other departments were those of Music, Color, Creative Science, and what you would entitle Social Economics. But these were elementary merely. It was here they really began to understand what lay ahead of them in these ways of learning. They were not initiated into the dynamics of these because they were not competent to understand them in their present degree of progress.” [\[41\]](#)

As a soul progresses they acquire more attributes – more capabilities, more tools at their disposal. Not physical devices, but an interior expansion, pathways in their spirit mind which weren’t open before. Access to the continual and infinite data flow of the spirit universe.

Not complete access, but a taste, for each level more is revealed. Jesus told us this in Luke 14:28; and to whomsoever much is given, of him shall much be required: and to whom they commit much, of him will they ask the more.

This sentiment is strengthened by what Andre Luiz’s mother told him. Andre had newly arrived on a low sphere of heaven; he had waited to see his mother, who resided on a higher level. In the book *Nosso Lar* , psychographed by Francisco C. Xavier, Andre spoke to his mother:

“‘Oh, Mother!’ I exclaimed, ‘How marvelous the sphere where you live must be! What sublime spiritual thoughts, what bliss!’

She smiled and explained:

‘Higher spheres always require more work and greater self-denial, my son. Don’t imagine that your mother spends all her time in beatific visions, removed from her rightful duties. Now I don’t mean for my words to convey any tone of sadness about my situation. Rather, I want them to reveal how necessary responsibility is. Since I returned from earth. I’ve been working intensely for our spiritual renewal. Many spirits remain bound to their earth homes after they discarnate, claiming they care about their loved ones too much to leave them behind. But here I have been taught that in order to be beneficial, true love must work nonstop. So, since my arrival, I’ve been trying hard to win the right to help those we love so dearly.’” [\[42\]](#)

Hence, like here on earth, the higher you go in an organization, the more responsibility you are given. The great exception is that the higher one rises in the spirit realm the more humble and dedicated he or she is toward helping others.

The Glade is Enlarged

The college and surrounding parkland were planned to be an extensive facility. It would need a larger field than that which had contained the original building and land. On earth the only solution would have been to build upward, or to acquire adjacent parcels of land and tear down whatever was previously built there.

In the spirit realm, this wasn’t necessary, the land itself could be expanded. Since everything was created by thought, by force of will ... it would take a subsequent show of will power to inflate what was already in existence. It would take a group of spirits to apply their minds to the task on hand. Arnel describes how this was performed:

“When they were all assembled they entered into communion of purpose and then directed their joint powers upon that part of the boundary which was to the left of the House of James. Slowly they shifted their stream of flowing power along the line of trees and cottages, and went the round of the three sides of the open space. When they had finished, with many pauses, for it was not done in one operation, the Glade had enlarged its boundaries so that it was some three times in area what it was before.” [\[43\]](#)

Only in our most fertile imagination could this have occurred. Yet it did and it did because the world in which we are from is not dense physical matter, but malleable Universal Fluid, which can be transformed into anything, which can be constructed by the mind. In actuality, we live in a logical universe, which has been wholly built by thought ... originated by the spark of an idea by God.

This multi-dimensional and multi-universe is where we live and where we were fashioned and where we are now being trained to use our minds to create. The entire earth; the human race was constructed for this purpose – to enable the collection of spirits surrounding the earth to comprehend the realm in which we live – and to become disciplined enough to be productive within its boundaries.

The combined will power didn't only enlarge the area ... they landscaped and built upon it.

“This enclosure was carpeted with greensward, and then a colonnade was made on either side at right angles to the House. At the other end of the Glade, and opposite the House, was there an arch of noble proportions erected, and two towers, one on either side of it. Beyond this arch was made a broad way out into the open. It descended from the arch and went through parklands which stretched far and wide until they blended into those estates where were established the departments of training of which I have told you.” [\[44\]](#)

The structures were all created by spirits. Spirits from different levels took part in the construction. Before the foundations were put in place by thought, a model was created whereby the members of the crew could ensure their ideas and formulations were all in accordance.

In the Glade, a new house for the new leader of the city was constructed. It was more than a living quarters, it was also a place of business. This large edifice similarly required a model before its construction. But this model was not dematerialized afterwards, instead it was bled of color, to appear to be almost a white alabaster stone. This they placed outside the house, in the gardens. Arnel stated this model was intricately connected to the house:

“If any visitor came by that way, or if any of those whose normal business was in those parts would know what was going forward within the House, the attendants of the glade could look within that shrine and they could know all they desired to know. This saved much expenditure of time and labor, for the House was very large, and had many departments within, and also beyond out in the gardens and lands encircling it. Here in the Shrine could be read, in epitome, all the business proceedings at any given moment in the whole of that House and its environs.

And it was a shrine because whenever the people felt need of some little extra strength to do what task was theirs at any time they would go there and, reclining in the Glade, or standing near the model, they would fall to meditation. Then they would be aware of the great powers within the House itself, and of their communion with their Ruler and his officers. Thus help was gained without their encroachment upon the time of their good leaders. They went to the Glade as young people go into a church, for silence and aspiration, and this was to them their altar both of offering and of refreshment.” [\[45\]](#)

Hence, the original model of the house was turned into a living notification board and a fountain of sustenance. It is as if, before you proceeded to a large office building, with dozens of floors, containing many departments, various meeting rooms, and simultaneous projects – you could stop by a stone representation of the edifice and peer into the detailed activity. If you desire, you could locate the person whom you wish to speak to and determine what that person was working on at that precise moment. And if you needed it, you could gain a little strength and resolve before you entered.

The intricacies of the spirit realm are vast and varied, yet we have been given the merest glimpse of what lays beyond. While we have been told of colleges and classes – exactly what is different and unique about each sphere, what are its natural laws, and how are spirits changed to be able to reside in each sphere are just some of the many mysteries still behind the veil.

What we have been told is enough to excite our imagination, to spur us on to learn more about the spirit world – so we can determine the best

course to follow to gain entry into a land where everything is possible.



Chapter 8 – The Purpose of Education in the Beginning Levels of Heaven

The lower levels of Heaven are meant as a place to reorient the newly passed to the spirit realm, to educate and socialize those who have risen out of the Lower Zone, and to solve some basic character failings so a spirit may be ready to ascend even higher.

As with elementary schools, where students learn to work together and are exposed to the rudimentary rules of society – so functions the initial stages of heaven.

It is a place where the curtains are first drawn back from the mysteries of the spirit realm. Where the full meaning of thought is action is revealed.

The lower levels of heaven are grand and beautiful to those who have never ventured higher before. They are met with a world of harmony and love – an atmosphere that is at first alien to many. Fitting into a culture of mutual support and collective warmth is a new process, for those who have travelled the physical life or life amongst the cruel and sarcastic creatures below.

Even though the souls gathered in these levels are good and well meaning, the habits of survival and self-defense in a different world are hard to break.

Through education and socialization the old ways of culture are broken down and discarded. Replaced with the examples of higher spirits helping others learn and interact.

Real and important knowledge is imparted. The building blocks of all subsequent education is established ... together with basic manners of thinking and behaving towards others and oneself. All serving to provide a solid foundation to build upon and allow each soul to climb up the ladder of spiritualization and intellectual growth.

No required assistance is withheld. The teachers, guides, and administrators are all on the look-out for opportunities for improvement. Whether by lectures, courses, colleges, or assigned tasks and missions,

every method of supporting personal growth is utilized. All within an atmosphere of love.



Section 2 – Spirit Education – Higher Levels of heaven

During many near death experiences, people see bright angels, sometimes only light, other times they can make out an outline of clothing and a face – these angels are residents of the higher levels of heaven. Higher being a relative term, only higher in the sense of their superiority to the lower regions. Beyond the tenth level are many more levels of which heretofore I have not yet seen explained in Spiritist literature. There are hints but nothing concrete.

The main dividing line between what I have designated the higher levels – meaning up from the beginning levels to the tenth sphere – to the next graduation of stages (starting at the eleventh level) where the act of creation begins is not distinct. Our knowledge is mostly absent above the tenth level.

Therefore, while the line is fuzzy between the boundary of lower and higher levels of heaven (all within the sphere one to ten categories), I have tried to place the more advanced types of learning into this section. I have used the following filter: if a spirit is learning about one particular topic, as if in an undergraduate class is one of the criteria for the lower levels, or if there is an explicit statement that the class took place in one of the lower spheres, then the series of communications to G. Vale Owen was included in the section concerning the lower levels of heaven. On the other hand, in the higher levels, learning usually brings together multiple concepts.

What should be taken from the many communications of spirits to the Rev. G. Vale Owen is the tremendous organization and focus in building, staffing, and planning for students to matriculate through an extensive series of colleges ... all created for the express purpose to launch the careers of spirits who can expand the universe(s).

I state “expand the universe(s)” because the purpose of continually creating more spirits, educating them, directing the construction of new worlds to educate and promote more spirits ... can only mean there is more space to be filled, more work to do, more worlds and galaxies to form.

Where all this ends and why is there an expansion? – I do not know, nor could I probably understand if told by a high spirit.

Of one thing I am certain, like the earth was thousands of years ago, a relatively unexplored globe, full of avenues for discovery and building of new colonies – so must be the supra-universe wrought by our Creator. Have no fear of waiting for a job opening as you reach ever higher in knowledge and power. Positions are waiting open for your talents and dedication.



Chapter 9 – Spiritual World Organization of Education – How Colleges Feed From One to the

Next

There is a plan for our children that everyone knows. First they go to a nursery school or start at kindergarten, then up through elementary to high school. If the student is motivated or able, then on to college. Which may entail multiple colleges and many years of study. Well, there is a process in the spirit world too. It's consists of graduated steps, just like ours... except it lasts for all eternity.

I realize the last sentence could be frightening to those like me, who although made it through school, almost never enjoyed the experience. The good news is you don't have to go. The only limitation not choosing additional education is the inability to ascend to the next level of heaven. Therefore, you could decide to take a break for a thousand years or so. Free will is always respected in the spirit realm.

Zabdiel reveals the process of education and ascending in Book Two of the book *The Life Beyond the Veil* called *The Highlands of Heaven* . He tells the [Rev. G. Vale Owen](#) how, at each level, smaller communities contain education centers to teach the newer residents of any level; then, if a student desires, they journey on to a larger population center for more study.

Zabdiel, in a previous communication, described a large heavenly city in the tenth level of heaven. I described that city in Chapter Eleven in *Book 1 – Heaven and Below* . The city had a grand temple, located on a hill. In the message he sent to Rev. G. Vale Owen on December 9th , 1913, Zabdiel reviews the structure of education:

“The Temple-shrine of which I spoke is of use not for worship alone, but for instruction of those competent to receive it. This is the High School of the sphere, and only those who have passed through the lower forms may come here for their final learning. At various points in that region are other schools, or colleges, each for some special class of

instruction in wisdom, and some few for the coordination of some of these branches together.

The City itself has three of these colleges, where those who have passed through what I will call the provincial schools come to learn the relative value of the various teachings they have received, and to combine them together. In many spheres this line is followed. But each sphere is both continuous, and also in advance of, the sphere inferior to itself. So that from the lower to the higher spheres there is a graded system of progress, and every step onward implies an added capability, not alone of power, but in enjoyment in the using of it.” [\[46\]](#)

If one considers each stage of heaven independently, their system of driving students from beginning their education in small centers, then advancing the graduating classes to major university hubs is similar to ours. As in our system, students are not obligated to graduate, they may change their minds and stay where they are, or travel to lower spheres if that is their desire.

Whatever detours a student takes, at some point, they will be motivated to once again begin the education process. The signs of the joys of higher levels are everywhere in the spirit realm. The system is designed to present to the population at any given level, the attraction of advancing higher. Every time a region is visited by higher spirits, the pageantry of their arrival demonstrates what lies ahead. The constant message is: There are rewards in focusing your energy in learning.

The method is always the carrot, never the stick. A path is laid out of future possibilities. Spirits can see the rewards awaiting them. Hence, one reads about spirits creating difficult trials on earth, with much suffering so they can purify themselves enough to climb to the next level.

Instructors

Zabdiel also instructs us about the teachers that lead the classes:

“Instructors are mostly of those who have qualified for the next sphere in advance, but who elect to stay in order to teach those who, in their turn, shall succeed them when at length they go on into their proper place of abode. From time to time these preceptors do make their

journey into the sphere above, and then return to continue their task. For they are enabled to bear its enhanced glory, while those who are of less degree are not able to do so.

And also there come once and again those of higher spheres into the lower for friendly intercourse and conversation with their fellows who teach there; and then they nearly always are willing to condition themselves according to the environment of that same lower sphere, in order that they may impart some loving words of encouragement to the pupils.” [\[47\]](#)

What is pertinent, and so unlike the majority of our teachers on earth, is that all of the instructors have attained their position because they have actually been successful in the course they are teaching. In schools on earth, one can always tell the difference between teachers teaching from theory and those teaching from experience. The quality of the classroom experience is, in the vast majority of cases, more pronounced and productive for the student.

Nothing is more entertaining for the student than hearing the real-life stories of a professor as part of a class. And at the same time, frequently unbeknownst to the listeners, valuable information is being disseminated. Those rare times when I have been privileged to be in a class led by one of these types of professors, have been the most memorable and valuable.

I also believe, for it has been hinted at in various sections, that a student isn't obliged to be locked into classroom learning. There are missions to perform while in class and there are exercises to undertake. One may travel to different spheres and even to earth to facilitate an important task, all part of the broad educational experience.

Imagine studying what is of vital interest to you ... remember back to that one class you couldn't get enough of: Now you have a glimpse of what life in heaven could be. This is, after all, why you are here, why you are trekking through trial after trial; all to advance, to correct those blemishes which hold you back.



Chapter 10 – High School in Heaven

There are spirits in heaven, who after passing away in physical form at a very early age are selected to “grow-up” once again in the spirit realm. This is done to give them a new start, to re-build their educational and moral foundation with an improved character and attitude. So that they may renew their quest for spiritual ascension, free of past hindrances.

As one may guess, just like on earth, they are full of mischief and merriment. The spirit Arnel supplies a short interlude about his encounter with a group of young spirits at a fountain in the seventh level of heaven.

On a Tuesday, January 13, 1920, the spirit Arnel told the [Rev. G. Vale Owen](#), about his walk with a group of fellow spirits about a set of gardens in a location in the seventh level of heaven that he was not yet familiar:

“The cross-way was walled on the left side as we went. On the right hand, when we had gone some little way, it was open to the gardens. The roof was supported by slight pillars of bronze and was of lattice work. About this Pergola climbed and blossomed beautiful climbing plants. But in the gardens were stretches of grass, flower-borders, canals and fountains.

On our left the wall continued and was of bronze, like the pillars, but paneled and embossed with beautiful designs. One large panel I noted especially. It was about eight feet high and twenty long. It was a metal-work picture of a fountain in the Sphere Eight. The picture was not still, as your pictures be, but all in motion. The waters flowed white from the fountain and thence went four ways. These four streams were severally blue, yellow, red and green; and the country to which each flowed took on the character of its own fertilizing stream. The green river watered a country wherein the chief lands were given to pasturage. Here were cottages, and shepherds and farmers and their sheep and horses and cattle and all that goes to make up an ideal agricultural region. All these, you will note, had a semblance of life and motion. The apple orchards swayed to the breeze and, as I gazed upon the woodlands, I could hear the voices of the birds. Even the fleecy clouds moved across the sky and cast their shadows below upon the meadows.

The blue stream fell from a high plateau into the ocean; and here were ships of all countries and of many periods, coracles, canoes, galleons, frigates and liners. All these were in movement, as was the sea upon whose bosom they rode.

The red stream went to a region of labor where men forged their engines of locomotion and of commerce, and also other metal instruments by which mankind had extended the use of his two hands by artificial substitutes of metal work. Even this was beautiful for the dominant note was light and fire, and the artist had treated the subject only from the viewpoint of progress. No instrument of war and destruction was here in the making. No drear ash-hills, no uncomely wastes of debris. In the picture the idea was not self-interest, but the motive inherent throughout was the desire to serve the race. And because this was so the artist was able to make this scene very beautiful also.

The yellow stream went forth in space. Now you will wonder how that was pictured, and I fear I can give you but a poor idea of it. I repeat, all was not still but in movement in these pictures. Now this stream as it went forth became transmuted first into spray and then into mist and then into light. But this was light in essence, its principle. It included within itself what you call night as night is suffused with sun-rays, only they be not luminous to you as you look at them from the rear of them as they stream out into space. You are looking in the same direction in which they are travelling. Only when you oppose your line of vision to the direction of their passage, when you stand on that side of earth which faces sunward do you say these rays are light-giving.

In that picture the light-rays were portrayed in all their aspects. The result was that we saw here the universe as we do, in fact, see it from our spirit side of life. There is no darkness but only light in its different aspects and phases. And through these great depths of light and radiance I could see the suns and their worlds upon their heavenly courses moving in the majesty of their steady grace. It was very informing as were all of the themes in that picture; and I paused for some time than I might assimilate its meaning.” [\[48\]](#)

The large panel with the wondrous moveable artwork foreshadows our future on earth. Arnel tells us:

“If men were adequately attuned to us then the various activities of earth would work out as here portrayed, even as the heavens do declare God His glory; which was the motive of the yellow, or golden river of the panel. Mankind is coming that way, but is far off the ideal yet.” [\[49\]](#)

At every step there is art and beauty in the heavenly spirit realms, each is meant to soothe as well as educate. Perfection in form and function serves to remind each spirit of their potential and the latent goodness waiting to emerge from all spirits in inferior planes.

We are told, through many channels, of what may come, if only we all work together for the well-being of all. Arnel revealed the symbolism and edifying scenes which await us on our ascension.

The Fountain

Arnel, taking his time to study the vast metal work, fell behind his friends. He began to walk onwards, along a pathway whereupon he heard voices and laughter. He came to view a secluded enclosure through the hedges.

He spotted a lush green oval area, with a fountain in the middle, about forty-five yards in diameter. Well-trimmed grass surrounded the fountain, level with its pool of water.

He saw his friends talking with some women. He heard the voices of men and women, which was natural, but he also detected the laughter and voices of children. He looked around and didn't see anyone who wasn't an adult.

Arnel's friend cried out to him:

“Arnel, my brother,’ said one of my friends, ‘here is a pretty to-do. These young ladies have been guilty of a serious lapse from their duties. Maybe you have come to help them to amendment.’

‘Joseph,’ I answered him – he was one of our younger brothers – ‘you give to me, out of your own good heart, so pleasant task as yourself, I warrant you would very eagerly essay. That you do not gives you much

merit for self-denial. Albeit, Joseph, my son, these young ladies seem to me to be facing their troubles very bravely withal. What is your crime, my fair young sinners, which even Joseph cannot remedy, and of which also you show such unusual signs of penance?’

Then one of the maids ran forward and, placing her hand upon my arm, turned her pretty face to me full of mischief, and said, with a show of tearfulness, ‘Please you, sir, it is a very grievous plight we be fallen into. We have lost the children.’

‘Which children be they?’ I said with mock severity.

‘The children we had in charge, sir,’ she said. ‘They were playing hereabout after lessons. They are good children and do not disobey. So when we made their bounds this Pleasance we knew they would not wander forth. Yet we have come and do not find them.’

‘Yet, as I came hither I heard their voices very plain,’ I said.

‘That is true, sir’ she replied, ‘and so did we. But where be the children?’

Now since we began our talk no child’s laughter had broken in upon us. Yet I knew they were at hand and were listening to all we said. Indeed, I was not slow to note that, from time to time, a subdued whisper came from the direction of the Fountain and, now and again, a child’s laugh, low and irresistible and quickly suppressed.

So I said, ‘By your leave, good maid, this problem pleases me and I feel somewhat wishful to try my tilt at it. So give me pause to think awhile and I will do my best, for I shall have shame to my greater years if I am not able to fathom this mystery, as I rather think yourselves have done.’

So, while she went back to her companions, I approached the basin’s rim to try my fortune in the game. The Fountain, you must know, was designed in keeping with the institution of which this enclosure was part. One of the departments was occupied in the teaching of children somewhat advanced. It was what you would call a mixed High School. The design of the Fountain, therefore, expressed one phase of their studies. It was made to represent a miniature hill clad in undergrowth

and little forest trees among which were ensconced groups of animals and birds.

As I drew nearer I was led to examine this statuary more closely. It was well grouped, but the execution lacked finish. Truly I could put a name to most of the animals which the sculptor had endeavored to express: but they were rudely done, and some were no less than grotesque, and the likeness to the original rather pitiable.

But I was cautious in forming my conclusion. I knew such faulty work in the Sphere Seven to be at least most unusual. There must be some reason in it.

Just as I was getting very deep into my thinking there came from the mouth of an alligator, right in front of me across the water, a loud and terrible roar. But the voice was not that of any lizard ever created. It was a very passable imitation of the roar of a tiger.

‘Aye, there be five in that one, they tell me, and by the din they raise I can quite believe it,’ said Joseph at my elbow.

Before he had spoken I had spotted my quarry. The children were inside those stone monsters. I turned to the speaker with a smile. ‘Joseph, my young friend,’ I said, ‘you dissemble but ill. They who told you this, I take it, are they who so sadly mourn the loss of their young charges. So there be five young tigers inside that poor alligator? So? Well now, and about what number, think you, does that ostrich hold?’

Well, that was all satisfactory, but it did not solve my riddle for me. Also I here make my confession that I was worsted in that bout; for I had not the data to work upon. That was supplied anon when the group returned to me with Joseph and, taking pity upon my perplexity, explained the affair from its inception.

It seemed, these children, a party of between one hundred and fifty, were, as their years would be reckoned on earth, from the ages of ten to sixteen or thereabouts, boys and girls together. At this age, if children have exceptional ability, they are advanced enough to begin the more intricate creative course of study. In other words, having been taught in the lower schools the creative principles relative to the grasses, trees

and, last, flowers and fruits, they proceed to apply their learning to the animal world.

This party of scholars had worked up to the Mammalia and had just been having a lesson on practical creative methods, before they had been sent to their play in the Pleasance.” [\[50\]](#)

The excerpt I used from the communication of Arnel to G. Vale Owen was quite long. But, I believe it was important to convey the entire scene. The happiness, the tone, the love and kindness in the interplay between two groups of strangers is vital to examine.

Like a close family, where mutual support is a given, the heavenly spheres in the spirit world consistently demonstrates respect and comradery amongst its denizens. Admiration and politeness between all is the rule, not the exception.

The Law of Affinity, where people of like-mindedness are gathered together, showers those who have invested their time and effort in their personal ascension with untold benefits. They are able to live with the same love and fraternity that they themselves practice. They are given the pleasure to reside in a location of harmony and love. Heaven could not be better defined.

On the other hand, think of the opposite locations. The levels below heaven, which reach down to the core of the earth. Whereas in the higher planes love is pervasive, in the Dark Abyss, the absence of love dims and hardens everything; manner of speech, relations between strangers, between friends, and expectations when meeting strangers – all fraught with danger.

The Children

Children – it sounds incongruent in heaven. If we are immortal souls, how can there be children in heaven? I believe the answer lies in the spirit realms quest to give us opportunities for improvement. While I have not yet read any certain description of why there are children in heaven – I have discerned, through the literature that has been published from the spirit realm – that resetting a spirit back to a previous starting point is one more tool that is used to allow each of us to find our path to the light.

If a soul has traveled through multiple lives accumulating worse instead of better characteristics, then, like rebooting your laptop or device, it frees the core to become functioning again while discarding accumulated unwanted attributes.

The basic foundation of character is still present. The potential for intelligence, sense of humor, playfulness, and capacity for love all still remains. Only the years of built up grievances, tormenting experiences, and plans for revenge against false enemies are deleted, never to arise again.

Hence, souls who were sent to earth, who were destined to live short lives, with the aim to reshape their character ... were given the gift of rebirth in the spirit world. Where we see tragedy in the short life of a child on earth, there may actually be a divine gift. A chance to begin again, to relive and rebrand as a more capable and complete individual.

There is one more benefit – the joy of seeing children in heaven. The immense pleasure of feeling the newness, wonderment, and love of a child. In our human experience, where we look upon children as joys to behold (most of the time!), imagine life in the spirit realm without that delight.

Creative Methods

In the last two paragraphs where Arnel described the children learning, he referenced “creative methods” and “creative course of study”, he was actually describing the on-going discovery of every spirit in heaven of how to harness their minds to build, to construct, and to conjure. To make, what is in their minds, by the force of their wills and intellect, via manipulation of Universal Fluids, into the object of their desire.

Arnel describes how they put what they had learned into action:

“Here they had formed a bold grand scheme and had immediately put it into execution. It was no less than the dematerialization of the whole fountain and the recreation of it with themselves inside the animals.

The first part went off grandly, for they were well skilled and practiced. But when the task of reconstruction came they found they had forgotten one difficulty. They would have to recreate these animals, themselves being in the animals’ interiors. This is what had bothered them. They had persevered, however, and were evidently very proud of their

achievement. For the noises they had continued to send forth from the mouths of these poor beasts, whatever might be said in respect of verisimilitude, lacked not in vigor nor in a note of complete satisfaction that all was well, and also of pride in their achievement. You see, my son, being inside they had no notion that each animal was not as perfect a piece of work as they had willed it to be.

Which, however, added greatly to the mirth of us their seniors and was also adopted and used later in their own studies to add to their knowledge and skill therein.” [\[51\]](#)

Therefore, gathering together in a group, the young spirits hatched a complex plan. They temporarily dispersed the fountain, back into its basic building blocks, and recreated it, with their own personalities concealed within the material veneer of the fountain.

The Unveiling

Seeing that the time was right, the children inside began to mimic the sounds of the animals they were entrapped within. After each small group demonstrated their ferocious, or sweet sounds, they all at once gave a last finale of animal noises.

Then Arnel tells us how the children exited the fountain:

“This being ended to their, but not to our, regret, there ensued their next act. This was to dematerialize the whole menageries, to come ashore, so to say it, and then to replace the group upon the island by re-materialization. The first part they managed quite easily. The animals began to melt and to fade away into invisibility.

The first to go was the alligator. There were five within him concerned in his destruction, and they happened to be of the older ones, and so, more advanced in the science. So they very quickly dissolved in obedience to their wills. We all stood round the Fountain at the basin’s rim awaiting the emergence of these young scientists. Well, as I say, the alligator was the first to go. But when the children stood up free – two boys and three girls they were – we all gazed agape for astonishment for a moment. Then realizing the reason of their plight we fell to

laughter. For they were all naked with no rag or stitch upon their bonny forms.

At first they surveyed us with some hesitance, doubting what was amiss. But when they looked on one another they understood the source of our surprise. Yet, although they were perplexed at their appearance, they took heart from our laughter to know that what had come to pass could soon be remedied. They therefore joined their laughter to our own, and so, they having now supplanted us their elders in the role of victim, we were quite well content.” [\[52\]](#)

The onlookers, the teachers, and the students were amused. There was no shame in their naked purity. The beautiful form of the human body has no wrong inherent in it.

In the spirit world, clothes are a part of a person’s character. Each spirit wills the garments they desire. Arnel tells us that if the children and teachers were just playing in the garden, then not having any clothing would be perfectly fine. Arnel states that clothes are desired when performing work or leaving your own area. Clothes in the spirit world are a matter of comfort and personal preference.

As an example, in the book *Memoirs of a Suicide* , the spirit Camilo Branco, told us, as interpreted by the medium Yvonne Pereira, about the time he encountered a beautiful young woman:

“The first of the two women, the one that had touched my shoulder, was a charming young blonde who looked to be about fifteen years old, radiating an irresistible gracefulness, However, she was oddly dressed: a white tunic cinched at the waist, a blue robe worn in the ancient Greek style, and a small garland of tiny roses decorating on her ivory brow. At first I thought I was the victim of a new type of hallucination, that passing from the Valley of the Reprobates to Hope City, I had acquired the gift of creating the opposite of ugly, that is, pleasant and beautiful. The young woman had the poetic and imposing name Rita Cassia de Forjaz Frazao, a name that would have put her in the circle of an aristocratic family in her last existence on the soil of Portugal. I was unable to contain my desire to find out about her interesting garments, and after a few days I noticed she was becoming increasingly bothered by my indiscretion. Finally, she answered my question:

‘I was buried like this, that is, they dressed my corpse like this when I left it the last time I was incarnate. The return to the Invisible was so dear to my heart, in spite of the grief it meant for someone I had loved very much, that I have retained in my mind the remembrance of my last earthly ‘garb’.’ [\[53\]](#)

Therefore, you wear what you feel you should wear. The appearance of clothes is a function of your mind. When, in the spirit world, you take away the thought of clothes, your outer garments simply vanish. Leaving you in your natural form.

There is No Sin Here

The spirit Arnel, knowing that he was talking to an English Anglican Reverend, and that what he told G. Vale Owen would be published in the 1920s, wished to clarify the episode at the fountain:

“Let me reproduce the scene for you. Here was a Fountain in the middle of a Pleasance. Around the waters’ rim were gathered a goodly number of young men and maidens with some elders among them. Upon the island stood five children in age about sixteen or seventeen years, and they were naked.

Now probably the first word which such a situation would bring to the mind of the ordinary reader in your earth-life would be the word ‘Shame.’ Of this I wish to speak quite clearly and emphatically. There was no blush or thought of shame in the whole company of us on either side of the water. There is no sin here in the Sphere Seven. Where sin is not shame has no basis and is not found. We have no prides in the Sphere Seven. No; when those five saw what had come of their daring experiment in a newly acquired science, they were at the first astonished and a little startled, then they were greatly amused. And then, seeing they were the first to become free of their prison, they smiled and made signs each to other to be silent. Thus they watched for the others to emerge into the light of day as, one by one, the animals melted into nothingness. And as each party arrived, each child in the same unadorned state, they waited expectant for the look of blank dismay which should betray the minds of their companions in this misfortune that they might pass on our own raillery to their fellows.

Nor were they disappointed. As group after group came forth there awaited them, first a pause, and then a burst of merry laughter, each louder than the last, as the ranks of the emancipated were reinforced by those more laggard from time to time.

At last they were all free, some fifty or more of them. Then the elder children took the little ones by the hand and all waded the water, and so came to our side.” [\[54\]](#)

Arnel explained that the effort to dematerialize out of the fountain was so strenuous for the children, that they did not have enough residual mental facilities to spare one thought to retain their outer garments.

Arnel wanted to stress the point that our earthly prudishness has no place in heaven. Our guilt over naked bodies, or embarrassment of showing flesh is not a factor for a mature spirit. The spirit realm, and most certainly God, desires each of us to be kind, gentle, and loving creatures. Feeling shameful with our bodies or the unclothed bodies of others is a sentiment to be left behind. It is basically unimportant and has no bearing of who a person is and the goodness and love which is present in an individual’s soul.

Life is love, compassion, and understanding in the spirit realm. We are on earth to learn to feel the same in our physical state. It is difficult given the conditions we must work and live in, but it can be done. With mental training and discipline. We should strive to take to heart the touching and amusing scene supplied to us by the spirit Arnel. A place where souls support each other, are amused and not critical of trivial outward appearances.

Arnel afforded us one more small glimpse of the life awaiting us in the heavenly spheres. To walk amongst vibrant gardens with exotic displays of movable sculptures and frescoes; to interact with good friends; to laugh with all around us; to always feel unashamed and protected – that vision should be what drives us to work hard to repair the blemishes in our character.



Chapter 11 – Learning the Creative Science in

Heaven – Auras Reutilized

Children go to school in heaven, just like on earth. But what they learn practically leaps out at us like a page in a fantasy novel ... they learn to create with their minds. They are taught and they practice how to control their thoughts, in concert with others, to not only create objects, but living creatures.

In January, 1920, the spirit Arnel told the [Rev. G. Vale Owen](#), about what he witnessed while at a type of mixed High School (a liberal range of ages) for children who have demonstrated abilities to control their minds.

Arnel describes an oblong lecture hall, with large French doors and windows open to the gardens outside. Birds fly in and out of the hall. The small birds land on chairs and even land on the students to rest awhile.

There was a large bird that flew into the hall and perched himself on an arched beam in the rafters. He looked down upon the crowd, as if he was unable to decipher what all those children were doing. His eyes darted back and forth. Sometimes looking at the students and other times following the flight of the little birds.

The Problem to be Solved

Seeing the action, the teacher gave out a challenge to the students. They had to entice the large bird down from the ceiling ... but it had to be done without force, without utilizing their minds to will the bird to descend. It had to do so willingly.

The professor told the older students to leave with her; she wanted the younger students to figure out this riddle. She and the elder students left to the gardens, as the remaining students stayed put; looking puzzled.

Arnel stood fast, wishing to witness how this problem would be solved. He describes what occurred in the lecture hall:

“Now there are methods of process more than one by which that thing might be done. It is not my purpose now to tell these to you, but only

how these young pupils essayed their task. You must keep in mind that their studies were, at this time, in principle directed into the sphere of the creative faculty, and also that they were still in the initial stage of that department of science. To one more advanced the problem would never have presented no difficulty soever. But these boisterous young scientists were, for the moment, at stand, because of the qualification inset into the problem by their Praetor. This was that their wills should be used creatively. That was the ruse and that alone, for it would have been easy for them to will the descent of that bird and claim his obedience. But that would not have concerted with the quality of creation.” [\[55\]](#)

The formulation of the problem presented to the students displays the philosophical cornerstone of God and His High Creative Lords – down to the Angels who help us in our daily life. The central theme is one of always protecting free will. Not just free will for humans, but also for any creation, whereby the programming of that object should be able to follow its instinct and intellect without constant direct interference.

That which is conjured or evolved alive must not be a robot, awaiting explicit instructions for every movement – an autonomous living thing must be able to not only make their own decisions, but also improve along its own lines. The spirit realm is wholly dynamic, it is always changing and evolving. And every creature within is expected to perform the same.

These students, when they graduate and at some distant future, may come to earth to lead us on our correct path, they will have learned to alter our direction subtly. Not to place an irresistible command in our head, but to place a desire, a treat, in our path, to lead us to the preferred bearing. All accomplished with maintaining our free will intact.

The Solution

Arnel describes the scene with the classmates in silent reflection. They were deep in thought, when suddenly one voice started and the others followed. Finally one student proposed a solution. Arnel continues the narrative:

“It was one of the girls who hit upon the method which came to be adopted after much noisy discussion. The children made a circle of the

couches which had been placed in irregular fashion about the room. They then, one and all composed themselves in easy order, with the smaller children distributed among them, and fell to their task in right good earnest.

The first stage of their proceedings was to gather all the smaller birds within their circle. This was easy. They came, one after another, to the number of sixty or thereabouts. Then those birds began to group themselves together in the middle in response to the concentrated will of the pupils.

When they were brought together in this way there was much chirping one to other and preening of plumage. But gradually, they began to grow silent and still, until they stood there all charmed into sleep.

I was watching it all very curiously, and now I noted a change coming over them. Their many-colored feathers slowly changed their nature and became a rather dull slate color, not unlovely and very chaste it was, but of neutral tint. They had withdrawn from each of those birds its aura, not quite entirely, but leaving perhaps some eighth part thereof which, however, was not visible without, but was distributed through the body of the bird within.

Then the children on the right, as I watched them from beneath the Arcade, quietly and slowly left their stations and going over to the left end of the room, took their stations behind those others who still reclined upon the lounges. Awhile a luminous cloud gathered in front of them, and between them and the birds. This was the aura of all the birds, composite and blended into one. It slowly contracted upon itself until it lay upon the floor, in shape as a large egg. This was then gently raised upon end. Its weight had become increased in ratio to its condensation.

Then its shape was changed until there stood in its place a replica of the large bird who still sat upon the arch aloft very intent upon the strange doings in process below him. At length the new-born bird slightly moved its head, and some of the little pupils began to clap their hands in delight. But they were stilled instantly by their elders lest distraction of will should mar their work, now nearly complete.

The bird stood there still and silent, but soon there came a little lifting of wings; then her eyes opened; then she walked a few steps towards the children. Still they applied their wills in united action upon her and at last she stood there a live bird, mate for his majesty aloft.

She ran to one child and then to another, receiving their caresses wherever she came. After this had for a while proceeded, she went a few yards away from them and uttered her love-call, and down came the bird from aloft and joined his mate upon the floor.” [\[56\]](#)

Children creating life from other life. It is as if a small house composed of building blocks was presented to a child. Then a picture of a different home came into his or her view. The child would dismantle the original house and attempt to create a new house with the same material.

Aura – Logic Encapsulated Within Energy

This is how we all learn. We don't invent out of thin air, we reuse, and we build upon that which was already present to make something new. It is the same with a person first learning how to program. They write a few simple lines of code, but in the main, they borrow from other routines. They reuse subroutines, modules, and services to build a new logical construct – a new program which may be used for a different purpose, but was built out of the parts of other applications.

The children in the classroom, utilized the auras of the smaller birds to make one larger bird. What is an aura? – To us on the earthly plane it is an atmosphere generated about a thing or a person; an invisible emanation. But it must be more than that to be manipulated and reused. It must contain the logical DNA within it – the full range of subroutines, interfaces, and ethereal connections and logic of its very being.

Hence, the children were using a set of logic which was encapsulated within an energy field. They extracted the required logic from each of the smaller bird's auras and amassed one larger bird.

When the spirit world refers to individual spirits, they often use the word “personality”. As if our sum total of our being, our multiple lives, our character, our current state of ascension could be summed up in one word. But what if it can – think of the genesis of writing a movie, novel or play or

even a video game; the central characters are supplied with a “personality”, a set of attitudes, capabilities, and character that provides the foundation of all subsequent actions and dialog of that actor. The logic deriving from a specific “personality” must be adhered to, otherwise the character in the film would appear arbitrary and false.

Therefore, we are, each of us is a “personality”, a buildup of experiences that are on top of our moral character. And we are on earth to reform and reprogram the least desired portions of ourselves. We are free standing logical constructs, who have the ability to modify ourselves – hopefully for the better. As we improve, we are allowed more range and more power.

Reversing the Process

At the end of the great experiment the children let out a yell of victory. The two birds were petted by one and all.

Arnel reported that the most difficult part of the trial was the construction of the throat, so that the female bird would sing the correct song using the right pitch to attract the male bird.

This fact serves to reinforce the utilization of the other auras. For the most unique areas of the new construction were the most difficult to build. The students couldn’t just lift the logic out of the auras of the smaller birds, since nothing was similar to the throat of the larger bird. Therefore, that section had to be customized.

The artificial female bird wasn’t allowed to exist for long. The smaller birds were not to be denied their full auras. Arnel tells us what happened next:

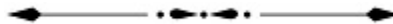
“There now remain for them to proceed with the reverse process, by which the bird was again resolved into the original composite aura-cloud, and this again dispersed among its original owners.

This was effected, not by their concentrating their wills upon the bird itself, but upon the smaller birds standing there insensate and unconscious. That was why they did not withdraw all the aura from them. Or it was one of the reasons why. Another was that it would not have been well with the birds if they were deprived of their auras in

total. It was therefore upon that remnant left to them that the children now operated and, through it, extracted, from the composite cloud, for each bird its own aura. For it was more easy this than had they essayed to operate directly upon the cloud and to separate the auras there intermingled.” [\[57\]](#)

From the paragraph above, I would surmise that each component of the aura that was extracted from each smaller bird had a unique tag. And that, by using each small bird, the students initiated a request to query another source to retrieve their original programming. Hence, the logic for each bird would be reset and restored in good working order automatically. All using native routines that were present in each of the creatures.

This is what is waiting for you when you traverse from one dimension to another. Only your physical body is left behind. Your spirit, your “personality” is intact. How you modified yourself during your life is now part of you in the spirit realm. The opportunities to grasp in this fantastic location are entirely up to your free will.



Chapter 12 - Seventh Level of Heaven – Games

Children Play.

Children learn, even in heaven. But they also need time to play. Their games are different from the games earthly children play. A collection of messages from various spirits to the Rev. G. Vale Owen, describes games that could have been lifted from a fantasy series about young magicians. The games are more concentrated upon the mind than the body.

The spirit Arnel who was visiting the seventh level of heaven, was at a school for advanced children, ranging from an equivalent earth years from about eight to eighteen. Arnel wished to convey the games that children played, so readers in the physical world could discern the differences between life locked in dense matter and life lived in love and energy.

Aerial Flight

Arnel described the campus as one with the surrounding environment. There were gardens, sculptures, fountains, and forests – all intermixed with the various halls and buildings which comprised the grounds.

Outside of one of the lecture halls was a garden, an enclosed area, shaped into an oval by hedges and other topiary. In the middle stood a fountain, circled by water. The grass seemed to float out from the fountain. In the vernacular suited to the last time Arnel was physically on earth, he called this the Pleasance.

“They gather in different parts of the Pleasance. One stands atop the Fountain upon the ledge where the design ends in a tree. He calls to one of his playmates, giving him a certain position upon the Fountain. The one bespoken closes his eyes and then raises himself, by what you would call the process of levitation, and floats to his position. One after other is called until they be grouped everyone in proper station. Then another descends to the sward, and calls them back, and they have to descend in like manner, eyes closed, on the exact spot whereon they stood at the beginning of the game. If you will follow such a game as

this in your imagination, and the mistakes it is possible to make, you will see how much fun these gay young people find in it.” [\[58\]](#)

When I was young we played a game called Marco Polo; it was played in a pool. Whereupon one child would hide from the others. Each child must close their eyes and yell “Marco”, and the one chosen child with his eyes open would have to shout “Polo”. Until one of the children found the one who had been constantly dodging the unseeing swimmers. It was a game designed to train oneself to determine the direction in which sound came from.

The training is the same in the spirit world. But it is more than exercising the relationship between sound and direction ... it is about establishing and strengthening the mind to place the body in the exact location desired. It is about the connection between thought and action.

In heaven, one may walk, but also one may rise into the atmosphere, since your mind places your body where it belongs. Terra firma is a reference point. A point to begin.

Spirits who have trained themselves, don't have to only travel via foot, or other methods of physical transportation – they may move by thought – called volitation, in Spiritist literature. And, the speed of light is not the ultimate limit of velocity in the spirit realm.

In the book *Nosso Lar*, dictated by the spirit Andre Luiz to the great Brazilian medium Francisco (Chico) C. Xavier, Andre Luiz remembers a conversation he had with a friend in the spirit colony about volitation. Andre saw people walking and means of transportation, named Airbuses, which would take people around the colony, or back to the earth plane. But, he knew of people who didn't require any such means of transport – they just went. His friend had the answer:

“Here, in *Nosso Lar*, not all of us need an airbus for transportation, because the more elevated inhabitants of the colony have the power of volitation at their disposal. Nor do all of us need communication equipment to converse over long distances, because we mutually maintain ourselves on a plane of perfect thought attunement. Those who are attuned in this way may use the process of mental conversation at will, regardless of the distance.” [\[59\]](#)

“Perfect thought attunement” describes one of the lessons learned in the game of Ariel Flight. Arnel went on to describe another game, which is a better example of playing, but at the same time learning “perfect thought attunement” in various circumstances.

Balancing the Ball

“Another game is that one should stand midway between two rows of players, each some eight or ten yards away. He shall hold a wand in hand upon which a large oval ball shall be balanced on its length. The two lines in opposition will the ball toward them or away. The wand-holder must move the wand right or left in order to keep the balance of the ball. One trick is that one row shall, with their eyes, signal to the other, and then one row pulls and the other pushes with suddenness. If the wand-holder be found unready the ball loses balance and floats down to the sward. So he forfeits his position and falls out of active service. This proceeds till there be three only left, and then, two, and these are proclaimed co-partners in victory.” [\[60\]](#)

The wand-holder must sense the waves of thoughts and their effect on the motion of the ball. The boy or girl walking slowly between the two lines, hoping to reach the end victorious, must learn to discern the power of mind directed force before it hits the ball like a wave and reposition the ball to keep it on the wand.

This game teaches the young to be sensitive of the thought waves within their sphere of influence. To be ready for any unsettling tide of emotion or energy that could knock them off course.

The other interesting tidbit in the description is that there is not a single victor. There are two co-winners. The spirit realm emphasizes collective cooperation and teaches the children that a single champion in any endeavor is not required. Only by recognizing the contribution of all are vast achievements attained.

Maneuvers in the Air

“A square is formed and into the middle thereof there enters one of the players. It is favorite among them that this one should be one of the smallest children because such are more spontaneous in their shouts of

mirth, while the older, understanding the process better, be more studious of the matter, noting each effect, and judging the force required for any special movement, and the direction of its focus, and so on. The little ones just accept the fun and yell with delight.

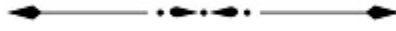
So, the players being set, they begin operations. I will tell you the game as I saw it last enacted. The one in the middle was a small girl child. The older children set their wills to work and I saw her slowly rise from the ground. At a height of some twenty feet she gradually assumed a horizontal position. This movement continued until she passed feet uppermost, and then completed the circle and stood normal once again. She enjoyed it greatly and, when the circular movement began, she laughed, and cried out gladly while the younger members among the operators clapped hands and laughed for merriment below.

Next they steadied her, still high in air. Then they bent her knees, until she sat enthroned on naught, but in the air aloft, and lowered one side and other side to them, as she were some baby queen and they her vassals.

Then in that position, obeying the wills of those below, I saw her glide through the air and beyond the confines of the Pleasance and, looking forth, I saw her perched upon a big tree. Right atop upon the leafy platform she stood, arms stretched out on either side of her, and laughing merrily.” [\[61\]](#)

Arnel tells us that all of these games enable the children to learn how to manipulate the natural forces of the spirit world. While our physical universe has its own set of natural laws, of which we are still discovering, the spirit universe and other dimensions have their own, where the spirit mind directly interacts with the Spirit Intelligence. Where all shapes, environments, heavenly spheres, everything ... is determined by the minds of spirits: Mostly High Lords, who have received their directions from the Supreme Intelligence. Lesser spiritual beings may modify their local surroundings until it hits a greater will.

We on earth learn to control what we say, but we must journey on from that valuable lesson and study to control our thoughts. If we are able to make progress, it will serve us well after we leave our physical form and return to the spirit realm.



Chapter 13 - Practice of Meditation and Vision for

Young Spirits

When spirits who have been raised in the seventh level of heaven reach the end years of their primary education, they are taken as a group to sit, meditate, and to test their ability to “see”; to peer into a different section of the spirit realm.

“The scene was a valley where hills, tree-clad and with shrines here and there along the by-ways, formed a pleasing enclosure and shut off the distances from the view of those who gathered there. On the upper side a stream emerged between two high cliffs of vari-hued rock and fell into the valley with much music and clouds of spray bejeweled rarely.

When the company of some thirty or thereabouts were attuned, they reclined at ease beneath the flowering trees within the circle formed by those about the valley, and then the Director spoke to them in very quiet manner, for disturbance must find no place in exercises such as these. He said, ‘Let peace be about you and within you, my children – so – so – so. Peace and quiet, quiet and love. Now let your thoughts aspire – quietly, quietly, my bairns, for those realms into which you penetrate now are realms of peace, and naught of unrest therein is found.’” [\[62\]](#)

The Director, the spirit Arnel, desired to impart to the Rev. G. Vale Owen, how young spirits are taught how to plug into the vast spirit existence. It is part of their training in the science of creation. They learn to focus their energies, to draw power from the atmosphere around them.

As the students relaxed and let their minds explore, Arnel picked out one boy, Raoul, and asked him what he saw. Raoul answered:

“Upon a rock of purple stone, flat topped and standing lonely the height of fifty men, I see a figure. He is male. His robe is blue to the middle of him and then shades into green and on to amber about his knees. His belt is scarlet and white entwined. His shoulder jewel is a ruby left, and right a sapphire. His chaplet is not set upon his hair quite. It hovers about his head some very little way apart. It has stars which join their scintillations and so make the chaplet consecutive, one piece

circular, and they are of golden and green hue alternate, of more brightness on the right side. By signs like these, and by the last sign of the chaplet chiefly, I know he is some order high in estate. Who he is, and his purpose there, I do not know. I think the station, where he stands looking abroad from the top of the rock in rapt attention, is near the beginning of the second sphere away, or on the further boundary of the sphere next to us.'

'That is as I also see him,' the Director said, 'save that with him I see a child set upon his shoulder. Also they look this way, but past us on into the sphere between this of yours and earth. These are Israel and the Christ Child, Raoul. As you saw them in the glade at Christmastide they were conditioned to this Sphere Seven and less sublime in their appearing. You see them now with what glory they are able to beclothe themselves in the Sphere Nine. You counted distance rightly there. But you did not see the Child Whose body and clothing are more sublimated than those of Israel.'

'I saw the brightness of Him, my lord,' the boy replied, 'but not the shape of Him, and thought it but radiation of the stars of Israel's chaplet.'" [\[63\]](#)

Raoul, by plugging into the Universal Intelligence, was able to see a scene play out in a superior sphere that had already occurred some time ago. Raoul was able to correctly detect the sphere by the more powerful light diffusing the scene which he detected.

Arnel then spotted a young girl, who appeared to be about thirteen and told Raoul to go over to her to determine what she was experiencing. Raoul went over to her side and kneeled next to her and placed his hand in hers. The girl told Arnel what she saw:

"There was a great highway which ran along a wood-side, and on the other side of the road there was a river. At one place there ran down to the tide of the river a broad flight of steps, and within the wood opposite there stood a large house. People were landing from boats which came to pause below the steps, one by one continuing. These people ascended to the roadway and, crossing it, entered the gates and passed within where the wood bordered a road each side. Near the

house the road was clear of trees, and the house stretched right and left facing the wood across its clearing.

The people went forward, some into the house and others into the garden or the wood. Others stood in groups conversing.” [\[64\]](#)

Raoul had not said anything yet. Then Arnel described what the girl had seen:

“At the gates there stood two men. They were of great strength and beauty. They looked across the river and, now and again, one or the other lifted up his hands as signal. When he did this there came a beam of light across the waters, and it rested for a moment on house or road or wood. Its coming and its going were prompt and decisive, as if those who sent it had perfect knowledge where it should find its quarry, what quarry it should be, and also why.” [\[65\]](#)

Arnel knew there was something else which the young woman could not explain. Therefore, he went over and he placed his hand upon her head to examine the scene in greater detail.

Making a Connection

There are many instances of the power of touch as an improved conduit for communication. When a psychic touches another incarnate, or a spirit lays his or her hand on an incarnate, or a spirit touches another spirit – it all seems to expand and heighten the effectiveness of the dialog.

There is a scene in the book *Missionaries of the Light*, dictated by the spirit Andre Luiz, psychographed by [Francisco \(Chico\) C. Xavier](#), where Andre witnessed a spirit putting his hand on an incarnate woman’s head. This is what he saw:

“He put his right hand on the young woman’s forehead, keeping it under a vigorous magnetic influx while transmitting benevolent thoughts to her. I noticed that when it touched the young woman’s curly hair, his proactive hand let off luminous sparks, which only I could perceive. The young woman seemed to become more poised and dignified in her almost childlike expression.” [\[66\]](#)

It is as if a cable was connected directly into a body, the luminous sparks were the flashing lights denoting the interface was complete and operating.

While spirits can detect our thoughts from the rays emanating from our brains, the level of comprehension seems to be stronger when there is physical contact. It allows a deeper intrusion into thoughts and past memories. It is as if, they become merged into all of the complexities within the maze of our mind. Allowing the spirit to follow the path they are searching for, and to expose the deeper emotion and meaning of what we do and who we are.

Explanation of the Scene

Arnel noticed that Raoul had not said a word – that he must be analyzing the episode, but that he too, could not decipher the meaning of the beam. After Arnel placed his hand on the girl, this is what he detected:

“Then I knew what barred him out so that he, advancing to the door of the mystery, yet could not open it and enter in. So I explained their problem to them.

The scene was cast, not in one of those spheres ahead of us, but two spheres behind. That is to say, the river was the boundary thereabouts between Spheres Five and Four. Now those who live there be good people, but not quite at ease from the influences which from time to time invade the Sphere Four from the Sphere Three, where disturbances often arises, in its turn, from those regions next Earth.

Nothing much can invade the Sphere Four in this manner. What untoward influences are able to rise into it do not harm, but only hinder and retard. They have the faculty of circumscribing the freedom of those who, being progressive, yet still a certain affinity with Earth. Such affinity is consequent sometimes on their having loved ones still in the flesh, or some enterprise agait in the world may be of interest to them still, or other cause obtain.

When those people, therefore, crossed over into the Sphere Five they had need of watchfulness by guardians placed in different parts where they first would wander. Those at the gates were two such watchers.

Seeing some sign of weakness or distress among these others newly come, they at once signaled and received at once information as to the character, progress and present estate of such person as they made enquiry about. Also a ray of strength was sent upon the person in question. These rays were visible only to the watchers, and not to those on whom they were directed. They were visible also to the two children because these were of a higher sphere. They did not understand transactions as these they witnessed because they thought the sphere into which they gazed was higher than their own. But it was of lower degree than their own.” [\[67\]](#)

Hence, the beams were lights of help and assistance. This illustrates that we are not only watched on earth but on the spirit planes as well.

After Arnel told this to the Rev. G. Vale Owen, he thought in his mind why couldn't the children tell up from down. Arnel sensing what G. Vale Owen was thinking, tried to correct the misunderstanding.

Plugging into the Universal Knowledge

“Only visualize our environment not so materially. I perforce must tell you my tale in earth language. And I must say now ‘up,’ and now ‘down,’ and again ‘forward,’ and yet again ‘behind.’ But these are not adequate to enshrine the more subtle of our conditions, as you know.

The perplexity of these children lay not between the two directions ‘before,’ ‘behind.’ For when they looked into other spheres they looked into infinity or towards infinity through those spheres. You mark me, my son; the operation I have described was not one bidden up and away to this Sphere or that other. This with us, as with you, would be a matter of going this way or that way – forward or backward, if you so will. But what they were now doing was of different process. It was the inverse of the other. For instead of moving about in an environment exterior to themselves, they did the other thing. They absorbed their external, mental and willful activity into the interior of their own selves, and found, for the time, their own environment. Their action was, you note, directed inwards upon themselves. Here was no such plain boundaries of realm and sphere as obtains in ordinary. It was this reversal of process which created their perplexity. They thought they

had penetrated into the Sphere Eight or Nine, and found there conditions which were foreign to those spheres. So it was they blundered.” [\[68\]](#)

No forward, no backward, no up, and no down – this is the great conundrum of heaven for most people. In the messages from various spirits to the Rev. G. Vale Owen, they talk of spheres ... which to our ears sound like succeeding levels of concentric circles, the higher spheres encapsulating the others. Like the layers of an onion or tree rings. A definite geometric shape enables us to navigate through the many mansions of heaven.

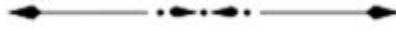
How else could spirits speak to us? Telling us that in actuality we live in a dense, information rich environment, with no time as the keeper of sequence – would only baffle the listener. This concept doesn't fit our windows of comprehension.

That everything, everything as in the spirit world, the physical world, the walls you live within, the pillow you lay your head upon before you sleep ... is a logical construct. Programmed by the will of High Lords and their minions under the direction of God.

Numbers, data, tags, pointers to other data, timestamps, ideas, and random thoughts swirl all around us. The children of level seven were learning to tap into the data stream, to selectively follow a path, to interpret the data to relive an entire sequences of events.

Gratefully, we have been created to interpret the data presented to us as concrete, as a living environment, as real. We are unable, in our present state to violate rules – rules that we interpret as laws of nature. But, as we ascend, the rules are removed and our sight and span of diving into an ocean of information is expanded – giving us immense capabilities of which we can only imagine.

This is why we on earth should expend our energies on our mind and not transitory material goods. Whatever we could wish for, will, at some time, be available to us by our mind and faith. We shall be able to create anything from the infinite Universal Fluid around us. Everything on earth is just part of the scenery, made up so we may journey through our appointed lessons.



Chapter 14 - Communication Between Spirits of Different Levels

There is a short three paragraph description of how spirits communicate with other spirits at different levels, by the spirit Zabdiel, who resided in the tenth level of heaven, when he communicated to the [Rev. G. Vale Owen](#) in 1913. The passage lacks details, but the central theme is the need to condition oneself spiritually to speak with spirits superior to oneself.

Zabdiel, at first, describes how when spirits from any level of heaven descend to the earthly plane they must transform themselves in order to be able to make contact with incarnates. Here is how he introduces the subject of communication between spirits of different levels:

“When a spirit from one of these spheres descends to your earth, it is necessary, in order that he may make contact with you who dwell there, to condition himself in like manner, and this in more or less degree. So it is here between the higher and lower conditions obtaining in the spheres of various quality and elevation.” [\[69\]](#)

The necessity of spirits making themselves denser to be able to be seen by inferior spirits is amply documented in the series of book psychographed by Francisco (Chico) C. Xavier, under the influence of the spirit Andre Luiz. In one occurrence, in the book *Liberation*, Andre Luiz journeyed to the [Abyss](#), also known as purgatory, a region below the crust of the earth, where he is instructed to concentrate and increase the material component of his body so he may be detected by the low spirits living in the dark regions.

Hence, for example, when a spirit in the tenth level travels downward to the seventh level, they must take on the characteristics of a spirit living on that stage of heaven. They must decrease their brightness and take on more matter, since residents below them have a higher ratio of matter to energy than spirits on a superior plane.

Next Zabdiel exposes the fact that all spirits on a certain level are not equal in the ease of communication, including humans on earth. He tells us:

“But it is easier for us to commune with some of you than with others, and that according to your degree of advancement spiritually. So again, is it here in the spirit land. There are those in the Third Sphere who know of the presence of those of the Fourth or Fifth or even higher spheres, by reason of their advancement spiritually beyond their fellows. If to these latter such visitors wish to become visible and audible they must the more completely condition themselves to the environment of that sphere, and this they do.” [\[70\]](#)

Zabdiel’s statement lets us peer into what is required for us to advance. Not only do we need to encompass the path of light, to create a foundation of love, charity, fraternity for all of God’s creatures, but we must acquire capabilities which are important to spirits in higher spheres.

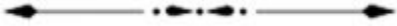
There is an entire organization of schools and paths to higher universities within each level of heaven. Hence, every spirit, who desires advancement, are required to improve their spirituality as well as their acquired knowledge. Both are prerequisites in order to be promoted to a higher level.

Zabdiel leaves us with his observation on what he has just presented:

“This description is in outline, and you will see that what seems at first to complicate life here really serves to its orderly arrangement. The leading principles which govern the communion of saints on earth with those passed higher are produced hither, and continued on into the higher places upward in orderly sequence. And if you wish to know what regulates our own communion with those above us, then reason it out by analogy, and you will have as fair knowledge of it as is possible to you while still on earth incarnate.” [\[71\]](#)

The spirit realm is contiguous and symmetrical, like the rings of a tree or the marvelous structure of the chambers of a sea shell, one sphere melds into another, all connected. How communication flows down follows the same pattern up. Spirits who wish to speak with higher spirits must possess the correct qualifications to open a channel through the boundaries from one level to the next. The attributes are always the same, only the degree for each level and the variances between them differ. Spirituality is the key to talk, summon assistance, request favors, and learn from those who have superior knowledge.

For us on earth, as we increase our knowledge and prove our dedication more roads will be open for us to receive messages and assistance from our spirit mentors. While it may take time to understand what is being said to us, the meaning will become clear, with more study, and closer observation.



Chapter 15 - Spirit Families – Helping Each Other

Progress

Zabdiel, a high spirit from the tenth level of heaven, as it is designated for the convenience of us on earth, walked through a small village and noticed small, but well-appointed homes ... until he saw a house in a slightly inferior state. Knowing that spirits on the tenth level had the power to configure their homes to their satisfaction, he asked the village elder about the people who lived there, he was told:

“You know the man who lives here, he and his sister. They came over from Spheres Eight and Nine some good while ago together. Here they progressed and, from time to time, have returned to the Fourth Sphere, where they have loved ones and, in especial, their parents. This they have done in order to help them onward. Lately they have come to be some little less at their case in these surroundings for the love they bear to those behind. It would seem that these are making their progress very slowly, and it will be long before they reach this estate. These two, therefore, await the coming of someone who has the authority to permit them to depart to take up their abode with those they wish to help, in order that their more continual presence should be at the disposal of them to enable them onward.” [\[72\]](#)

Spirits in higher levels of heaven live the Golden Rule and understand the importance of love and kindness in all things. This doesn't mean they are passive or unable to make sound observations – only that they present their findings in an even-handed and caring manner.

The village elder explained the facts and the circumstances surrounding the two residences of the out-of-place house in his village with an understanding of why two good souls would let this pass. He presented the probable outcome of their behavior (a longer time period to learn what they must at the tenth level) and explain their desires in a friendly tone.

Zabdiel, who is part of a group of spirits that are communicating with the Rev. G. Vale Owen in Book Two of the book *The Life Beyond the Veil* called *The Highlands of Heaven* . He recounts various episodes about his

life and travels to the [Rev. G. Vale Owen](#) so we may learn what is waiting for us in the celestial spheres and why it is worth improving ourselves to reach a spiritual state.

Zabdiel provides us a peek of how life is regulated in heaven. We are like the child peering through a keyhole, trying to understand what is happening in the room beyond. He can only glimpse at portions of furniture or walls, and see shadows of movements. The child can only make rough guesses, and those at the best of times are off the mark. This is how, mankind has tried to see heaven for centuries. Zabdiel is attempting to widen the aperture and explain to us what can be seen.

In his description, Zabdiel presents us with a real-life problem. He desires to show us how delicate situations are resolved in the world we shall soon inhabit. He illustrates that people's circumstances aren't answered by faceless bureaucrats mindlessly following rules formulated by uncaring political functionaries ... that force everyone into defined categories and prescribe punishments for any infractions.

“I found the brother in a small coppice to the side of the house and accosted him, inquiring for his sister. She was within, and we went to seek her. We found her there in deep mediation. She was engaged in communion with her parents far away in that other sphere. Rather would I say that she was sending her help and uplifting strength to them, for “communication” implies a mutual action, and the others were little able, if any to return their thoughts to her.

So I talked with them awhile, and gave my conclusion after this fashion: ‘It would seem that the strength required to build up your own progress in this Sphere is being drawn upon by those in the Sphere some degrees behind. You are held back by the love of those who are yonder, and slow to progress. Now, if you go to that Fourth Sphere, and there take up your habitation, you will be able to help them a little, but not much. For when you are at hand why should they stretch forth to come beyond their own present degree? It is not well, therefore, that you go to them in such a manner as that. Yet love is greater than all else, and as it is found both in you and them, it will be of great might to prevail when obstacles which now obstruct have been removed. I would advise that you do not relinquish your degree of this Sphere, but

that you come with me to our Chief, and I will ask that he will give you other work to do by which your own progress will be ensured, and that of your loved ones not hindered.” [\[73\]](#)

No mention of unbreakable rules were made. No threats as to the ramifications of their actions. Instead, Zabdiel sought to understand their desires and feelings; and pursued a course of action which would help all involved.

Assistance in the Lower Level of Heaven

We see this same approach in the book by the spirit Andre Luiz, *Nosso Lar*, psychographed by [Francisco \(Chico\) C. Xavier](#). Andre Luiz, who resides in one of the lower levels of heaven, describes a woman who is requesting permission to return to earth, in spirit form, to look after her family. She goes to the Minister of Assistance, Clarencio, to make her request:

“I would like to be granted the means of watching over my children myself in the physical sphere!’ replied the afflicted mother.

‘I am sorry, my friend,’ said the loving benefactor, ‘but only in the spirit of humility and service are we able to watch over someone. What would you say about an earthly father who wanted to provide for his children, but then remained idle in the comfort of his home? The Father has created labor and cooperation as laws that no one may break without causing damage to himself. What does your conscience have to say on the matter? How many hour-bonuses can you present for your request?’

The woman answered hesitantly; ‘Three hundred and four.’

‘It’s a pity,’ continued Clarencio, smiling, ‘that you have lived here for over six years but have given the colony only three hundred and four hours of work. However, as soon as you recovered from the struggles you had suffered in the lower regions, I offered you a praiseworthy job on the Vigilance Team of the Ministry of Communication...’

‘But that was intolerable work,’ she interrupted, ‘a constant struggle with malevolent entities! Of course I couldn’t adapt to it.” [\[74\]](#)

Let's do the calculation, she has worked three hundred and four hours over a six-year period. Hence, she has worked a little less than eight forty hour weeks. Not bad, to be clothed and fed, over six years for only working a total of two months. In Nosso Lar, everyone receives their required provisions and clothing, but for extras, such as enjoying entertainment centers, or taking in lectures at different schools, one needs the hour-bonus credit. All receive, no matter what level of work, the same amount per hour. There are exceptions for sacrificial services where the hour-bonus is doubled or tripled. [\[75\]](#)

Her dialogue with the Minister continued through a whole litany of jobs the woman attempted but abandoned after a few furtive days of effort. Yet, she was treated with the utmost kindness and understanding, all the while being gently pushed to comprehend that some sort of labor for the good of the whole was expected.

Above all else, the spirit realm respects our free will. We have the right to ignore every suggestion we are given. We have the right to not learn, to not improve, and to not ascend. We have the right to descend if we so desire; to live with less enlightened souls.

We are encouraged to climb the ladder of knowledge and spirituality, but never forced.

Problem Solved

Zabdiel doesn't leave us hanging, he describes the solution:

“When I departed they came along with me and, after consultation with our Chief Lord, I was glad to find that he, in the main, approved of what was in my mind. So he called them, and gave them words of approval for their great love, and told them that, if they would, they should become of those whose mission it was from time to time to go to the spheres behind and, there appearing (by conditioning themselves to the environment of the sphere in which they should be), deliver what business he should have to communicate. On such occasions he would request that their parents should be permitted to see and talk with them. By so doing they would be lured onward and upward to join these their two children in those higher realms.

He further counseled great patience, for that this thing might in no wise be forced ahead, but must progress by natural development. To this they assented with much joy and gratitude of heart. So the Chief Lord blessed them in the Name of the Master, and they departed to their new home well content.” [\[76\]](#)

Hurdles identified and plans to circumvent any obstacles are jointly developed, is the norm in the celestial spheres. Everyone is pulling together, there is no desire to demonstrate authority, only to proactively guide devoted souls to the correct path.

Through his description of how he assisted a brother and sister in their search to help their parents, Zabdiel lifted the veil which obstructs our vision of heaven. Allowing us to gain a better appreciation of why we must strive toward the light, here, in our dense bodies, on earth.



Chapter 16 - To Ascend – We Must Improve in All

Areas

I read a story in the book, *Life Beyond the Veil*, in *The Lowlands of Heaven* section. It was a communication to the Rev. G. Vale Owen from his mother in the spirit world. His mother told him about a spirit, a man, who had recently passed over and was wandering in a lower level of heaven.

The lost soul thought he was alone, but in fact his guardian walked behind him. Following him on his journey, the guardian knew the man possessed good traits and strived toward the light, but he had a certain hardness of heart, which precluded him from fully seeing all of the aspects of heaven.

As the man approached a small celestial colony, one of the spirits came over to him to see if he could be of help to the soul with a perplexed look on his face. As the kind assistant walked toward the lost man, the man's guardian sent him the facts about who was the wanderer he was approaching.

In the message to G. Vale Owen, the spirit who started a conversation with the lost soul is "A" and the man wandering about is "B". "A" walked up to "B" with a kind expression and began the conversation:

"A. You seem to be not very familiar with this region. Can I help you in any way?

B. *I don't think so, although it is kind of you to offer to do so .*

A. Your difficulty is one which we might deal with here, but not so thoroughly as we would like to do.

B. *I am afraid you don't know what that difficulty is .*

A. Well, partly, I think. You are perplexed because you have not met any of your friends here, and wonder why.

B. *That is so, certainly .*

A. But they have met you.

B. I have not seen them; and I have been wondering where I could find them. It seems so strange. I always thought that our friends were the first to meet us when we pass over, and I cannot understand it at all.

A. But they did meet you.

B. I didn't see any one I knew .

A. That is quite correct. They met you and you did not know them – would not know them.

B. I don't understand .

A. What I mean is this. When you came over here you were immediately taken charge of by your friends. But your heart, good in some respects and even enlightened, was hard and blindly obstinate in others. And this is the reason you did not recognize their presence.

B. What is wrong with me, then? Everybody I meet is kind and happy, and yet I don't seem to be able to join any party, or to find my own proper place. What is wrong with me?

A. The first thing you must learn is that your opinions may not be correct. I'll tell you one which is at fault, to begin with. This world is not, as you are trying to imagine it, a place where people are all that is good or all that is evil. They are much as they are on earth. Another thing is this: your wife, who came over here some years ago, is in a higher sphere than the one in which you will be placed when you have at length got the correct perspective of things. She was not mentally your equal in the earth life, and is not so now. But you are on a lower plane than she is on general lines and all things considered. That is the second thing you have to accept, and accept *ex animo*. You do not accept it, as I can see by your face. You will have to do so before you can advance. When you have done so, then you will probably be enabled to communicate with her. At present that is not possible.” [\[77\]](#)

When the kind spirit “A” told “B” that he must accept the fact that he is on a lower plane than his wife and he must take that deep into his heart (i.e. *ex animo*), he presented to all of us one of the eternal truths of ascending into heaven. It is not entirely how smart, how clever, how quick you are that counts. It is also your capacity for empathy, kindness, service toward others,

in other words the amount of love you possess in your heart. True love, love which transcends family ties, race, class, or prejudices of any type. You must cultivate your emotional and intellectual talents equally.

Higher spirits combine the two; when one is predominate over the other, then the next life may emphasize the development of the weaker attribute. Whereas, the man in question, who is intellectually gifted, may be directed to live his next life in humble surroundings, so he may learn to increase his spiritual quotient. Lessons may be put before him to teach the need for faith and love.

Higher Spheres

As spirits travel through one stage after the next, they are expected to successfully pass courses, to learn new skills. In a lower level, the Rev. G. Vale Owen's mother spoke about her and a group of spirits learning to use their minds to create a statue of an elephant. At their first try, they failed miserably.

She also mentioned different colleges, one to examine the effect of colors, another to create new music and sounds ... which would be processed in the spheres above and then sent back down to inspire humans. In higher levels, not merely inanimate objects may be created, but life as well ... by thought.

The spirit Zabdiel, told G. Vale Owen that each sphere had its system of small colonies or towns, which first welcomed new arrivals from a lower sphere and then would feed those spirits to larger centers as their skills increased.

Zabdiel provides us with the need to balance our focus in our development. When Zabdiel was on a watchtower in the upper regions of the tenth level of heaven, he learned about a colony in the lower area of the tenth sphere. He was curious about the small settlement, it seemed well-organized and somewhat different from other settlements in the area. He asked his guide on the watchtower about the colony and was told that some spirits who have reached the tenth level have experienced difficulty, in that they have not yet progressed in all of the heavenly sciences, as they should have.

Zabdiel then explained in more detail to the Rev. G. Vale Owen:

“There are some who progress evenly in all the faculties which are theirs; but others do not develop all their faculties equally all along their way of progress. These, none the less, are very highly developed spirits, and come to the Tenth Sphere in due course. But had they developed their neglected powers in the same proportion as the others, they would have arrived here much earlier.

Moreover, arrived here, they are at just such an altitude that what served in spheres behind them will serve no more in future. They must henceforth become more equalized in their faculties, and so of more equal balance.

The problem which gave rise to the establishment of that settlement was no other than this. And there they abide doing their work of help to others, and self-training the while. You may wonder wherein the difficulty. If you do so wonder, that is by reason of the much more complex perfection of the conditions here prevailing than is the case with you.

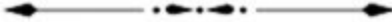
It arises from the fact that these people are really of the Tenth Sphere in some portion of their character, and of perhaps the Eleventh or Twelfth in other portion. And the difficulty is this: They are in some ways too large in power and personality for their present environment, and yet unable to proceed into the next sphere, where their inferior parts would suffer damage, and catastrophe would ensue which would probably throw them backwards many spheres behind, where they would be as ill at ease as ever.” [\[78\]](#)

Zabdiel goes on to tell G. Vale Owen that the colony works by spirits who are superior in one area help those who are deficient in the same subject, whereas those receiving help may be at an advanced level in another that their teacher or other spirits require. Hence, the colony organized itself to provide each with what is needed.

What else could we expect of a group of spirits who are altruistic and trained to be supportive of each other? This is the genius of God’s system. By allowing free will, the freedom to take our time to advance, God created

a system of each individual retaining their singularity, while ensuring overall goodness in each.

While on earth, every supposed method of promoting “goodness” or “sameness” resulted in concentration camps and mass murders; in God’s universe, life is sacred, free will is sacred and is not to be violated.



Chapter 17 - Managing the Evolution of Intelligent Life – Two High Spirits are Sent to a New World

When the human race on earth was beginning, before Atlantis and Lemuria rose to power, there were two young individuals who stood out from the primitive tribesman of the day. When they passed away to the other side, their excellence was recognized. They were trained for eons, until they knew enough to lead the destiny of another planet.

The Ceremony that sent off the pair of spirits was delivered to the Rev. G. Vale Owen from the spirit Arnel. The communication was in the book, *Life Beyond the Veil*, in *The Battalions of Heaven* section. It took place on the tenth level of heaven in the temple that touched the border of the eleventh sphere of heaven.

The Ceremony

Arnel described the throng of onlookers present at the ceremony to send off the two leaders and their group for a new mission on a primitive planet. He said the multitude was like the cells of a body, for they all were in harmony with each other. As the people stood ready, a cloud appeared overhead:

“The cloud was of green tint streaked with spirals of amber within itself, and capped with a canopy of blue. This cloud was continuously in motion, and at length grew into the shape of a stately pavilion whose roof was of the deepest blue-violet and the pillars of semitransparent green and amber. There were in all seven pillars round the sides and back of the semicircular shape, and also two on each side of the main opening in front. These last two were of deep violet, with spiral bands of crimson edged with white. All were pulsing with the life of those who were willing this gem of beauty into being, and from the structure proceeded a murmur of melody most lovely to feel – for we did not so much hear it as feel it. It is often real to feel sound here than it is with you to hear it.” [\[79\]](#)

The display was created by the thoughts of the band of angels making ready to depart the heavenly spheres circling the earth. Creation isn't necessarily the result of physical labor in heaven, it is more often the formation, through manipulation of Universal Fluid via force of will. Assembling the building blocks of the spirit universe upon command, compressing them and modifying their vibrations is the technique of creation.

Next Arnel tells us about the two leaders, those from deep antiquity of earth. The first was a woman:

“Then within the chariot there emerged into sight of us a beautiful young woman. She was facing us, and I noted all her loveliness, and, as I looked upon her, I saw nothing else for the exceeding beauty of her. Her body was of a tint you do not know. I will call it amber, but it was not the same tone as the amber of the pillars, but of more radiance and transparency, and yet with an aspect of reality and permanency which those wanted. She wore a robe of blue gossamer, but where it covered her body the two hues blended and became a delicate green. On her arms were bands of purple metal. She wore upon her hair a small cap of deep red with a thin band of white and gold, and her hair was brown with a sheen of orange upon it, as if it were touched by a ray of the sun at setting-time. And her eyes were deep purple and blue.” [\[80\]](#)

Arnel continued his description and called her a “Mother-Queen, a maidenhood, a spirit brooding over a race of people.” [\[81\]](#) She exemplified a call to action, her very presence made others feel a sense of urgency of purpose. While, simultaneously, she radiated a peaceful and calming feeling that provided focus to whatever task her attendants would be given.

The aura she possessed is only possible by thousands of years of experience, training, and dedication. The “Mother-Queen” began, as did we, an ignorant spirit, but using her innate humility, openness to criticism, and native intelligence, she rose to a great height. Her ability to always combine love, wisdom, and kindness placed her as a natural choice to guide the evolution of intelligence life on a primitive planet.

Then a young man came into the hall. The second spirit who was part of our earth during prehistoric times. Arnel provides this report:

“He was the woman in masculine duplicate. One was the complement and counterpart of the other. In only one thing did he seem dissimilar. His robe was of a slightly ruddier tint. I did not notice aught else of moment to mark one from the other. Even sex was expressed rather in spirit than bodily. Albeit, in form she was emphatically woman, and he man.” [\[82\]](#)

The Mission

Imagine the feelings of Christopher Columbus, Leif Erickson, or Zheng He, as they took off for unknown lands. Whereas, they would encounter new territories, new people, new vegetation; our two spirits would take part in husbanding a new race on a planet in the early stages of evolution.

Arnel describes their task:

“They had come to head a company of those who had been prepared in that temple and its environs and lead them forth on emprise of a large conception, and requiring much ability and power for its furtherance. This was that they should take their way to a planet which was just at the stage of evolution where intellect was beginning to realize itself, and to raise itself into distinct order out of the brute towards the man – but it would not eventuate in man such as the earth type is, but not very dissimilar, and in essentials identical. This company was to take up the work of guidance in the progress of this race just at this stage. They would not take over their task in its entirety, nor at once. This was to be their first visit to those high Creative Princes who had brought the planet to its present crisis. They would return, from time to time, hitherward for rest and counsel. They would return in part, leaving some of their number to carry on the work, to be relieved by others of them after rest, and so gradually the affairs of that planet would be gathered up entirely into their hands, the while, in this sphere and some other spheres, other bands supplementary are being trained to join them when the time shall be that the race is expanding and evolving to what stage shall require more numerous guardians and rectors at the helm of that ship as it sails the broad spaces of the heavens on its way from mist to substance, and to living creatures, and to intelligence, and, as I will say for you of earth, from animality, through human-sort, to godhead.”

[\[83\]](#)

In one long paragraph, Arnel succinctly described the evolution of all living planets in our universe, including the earth.

In the book, *On the Way to the Light*, dictated to Francisco C. Xavier, the great Spiritist medium, by the spirit Emmanuel, we are told that the earth was deliberately formed for the express purpose to use our planet as a place to incarnate spirits. The master of the entire operation, from setting our planet into orbit, the creation of the moon, manufacturing of the ozone layer to protect all organic forms, to the beginning of life until today is Christ.

Chosen by God to be the Lord of Earth. Jesus set forth the blueprints and utilized Divine Laws to construct an inhabitable oasis where humans could evolve and thrive.

How Life Was Manufactured

The creation of life was not left to mere chance. There was a plan and it was followed. *On the Way to the Light* lets us in at the beginning:

“Like modern engineering, which constructs a building foreseeing the tiniest requirements for its ultimate purpose, the artists from the spirit realm built the world of cells, initiating in primeval days the construction of the organized, intelligent forms of the centuries to come.

Regarding the earliest cellular constructions, the ideal of beauty was their main concern from the start. That is why throughout time, beauty, combined with order, has been one of the indelible marks of all creation.

Forms for all the kingdoms of nature were studied and foreseen. The fluids of life were manipulated so they could be adapted to the physical conditions of the planet; thus, the cellular constructions were fashioned according to the capabilities of the earth’s environment. Everything, obeyed a plan pre-established by the merciful wisdom of the Christ in accordance with the laws of the beginning and of the overall development.” [\[84\]](#)

Models from other planets were used to form the basis of flora and fauna of earth. Next, they were modified to thrive in our conditions. As life

forms evolved, throughout the various periods, starting with the Precambrian, small modifications were continuously made to direct the evolutionary paths of creatures on earth.

What we call natural laws, which are in fact Divine Laws, established when the universe was created, were used in ways we have not yet discovered to facilitate the entire arc of the earth's existence. These same Divine Laws shall be used to guide the path of the relatively new primitive world.

The act of creation, not just of star dust colliding and creating new suns and planets, but the spark of life and guidance of sentient species is a continual process in all corners of our universe and other universes. While we live on a planet of atonement, one step up from a primitive planet, whence we came – it should come as no surprise that another primitive planet is underway to accept ignorant souls to start their learning process.

In Allan Kardec's book, *Genesis*, we are told:

“The physical progress of a planet accompanies the moral progress of its inhabitants. Now, since the creation of worlds and spirits is incessant, and since the latter progress quickly or slowly by virtue of their free will, it follows that there are both newer and older worlds at different degrees of physical and moral advancement; worlds where incarnation is more material or less so, and where, consequently, the labor for spirits is also harsher or less harsh. From this point of view, earth is one of the least advanced. Because it is populated with relatively low ordered spirits, corporeal life is harder than on other worlds, just as there are less-evolved worlds where life is even harder than on earth, and for whom the earth would be a relatively happy world.” [\[85\]](#)

Hence, worlds need to progress, populations of human-like carriers of spirits need to be created and guided for the ever present job of elevating individuals and planetary collectives. This doesn't happen spontaneously. Only through a complex and an advanced organization, with capabilities beyond our wildest dreams, could entire planets be led up the stages of existence, from primitive to atonement to regeneration to a happy world.

Therefore, managers ... no, to put it more precisely; leaders must be trained to form and direct teams in all facets of planetary evolution. Which leads us to the next topic.

How the Two Lead Spirits Were Trained for their Task

The spirit Arnel tells us the man and woman were both exemplary humans of their time. That they were one of the first intelligent souls to inhabit the body of modern man, as he has attained his current form and function.

Arnel tells us more:

“There was the Bronze Age, as you have named it, for some portions of the race, and the Iron Age for others, and the Stone Age for others. Man did not evolve with universal equality.

It was when earth was progressing in intellect, and that is as exact as you can make it. It was long before Atlantis, or that other civilization which men call Lemuria. They came into the spheres about earth; and now, have accumulated much power, and also much knowledge, and being of high degree in holiness also, they made rapid advancement through these spheres, and passed beyond into the interplanetary spheres; and, as I believe, into those spheres which are interstellar. For I am of a mind to hazard that such as they are not entrusted with such work as this to which they had been sent except they be conversant with those high force which unify the constellations in their orbits, responsive each to others. They did not find their affinity until they came back hither, and then they were drawn together by natural gravitation of spiritual sympathy, and have since gone on their way, ascending together the stairs of the Heavens of God.” [\[86\]](#)

Arnel speaks of an intellectual journey of more than one hundred thousand years. Of learning on earth, our solar system, our Milky Way galaxy and beyond. These twins of light and love were sent to view the science and practice of creation ... at all levels, physical, biological, and intellectual. And only when separately did their courses complete did they discover each other and their bond.

The Rev. G. Vale Owen asked did these two high spirits learn by the trial of reincarnation in other planets. Arnel answered thusly:

“Not only, therefore, would such an operation as you have in mind be no true reincarnation, but it would be, not perhaps directly contrary to the laws which govern interplanetary cosmogony, but certainly of so irregular a nature as to be thought as unprofitable by those who have these matters under their authority to control the onward urge of the spheres. No; they visited those far worlds, both of this solar group and also of others as they did this earth, and as I do now. I come back to earth to reinforce my powers here, and I go to other planets, now and again, in like manner, seeking after greater knowledge of God His wisdom in the creation and guiding of worlds. But I do not take upon me their material condition. That would hinder me. I get at their inner life and the real state of them, the better from the inner – that is, the spiritual side. From my standpoint in the spirit, I can learn more of what is agait upon that world than I could do were I to go out upon its surface incarnate, and with my senses engrossed by reason of their obligation to operate through a machine so much heavier and denser than that of the body of that ethereal substance which, in comparison, clothes the spirit lightly.” [\[87\]](#)

Therefore, the two leaders made their way, progressing up the ladder of the heavenly spheres, by reincarnations on earth, and attending the colleges on each level of heaven, until they were deemed worthy of an even more intense program. Whereupon, they were sent, in spirit, to many worlds, with many races, shapes and cultures to explore. So they would attain the required experience to guide the proto-humans of a new planet.

Isn't this the true heaven? Where one can pursue their grandest desires to assist and guide others – whether by creation of material homes to the development of physical bodies to guiding a budding society and culture. What wonders one must see in intergalactic field trips? Whatever fantasy or science fiction world we have read of, it must exist and exist in an even greater form in the universes we have yet to discover as we rise in the spirit hierarchy.



Chapter 18 – Higher Education in Heaven –

University of the Five Towers

Spiritism tells us that when we leave our physical bodies, our lives still continue – we still work and learn in the spirit world. The heavenly spheres created and shaped by thought are malleable and subtly transform as waves of spirits ascend through each sphere. There is a University in sphere ten which serves to teach and make sense of spirit life – sitting below the level of the start of absolute creation.

Sphere ten is the level where spirits are still learning about their world and how it functions; it is the ultimate sphere for analyzing the present scope of the spirit universe around earth. Spheres above are where spirits learn to implement the science of creation. All of this was delivered to the Rev. G. Vale Owen from the spirit Arnel. The communication was in the book, *Life Beyond the Veil*, in *The Battalions of Heaven* section.

The University

Arnel described to G. Vale Owen a University built on a great plain in the tenth sphere. It was a city unto itself. With lakes and forests interspaced. It consisted of a Dome, a Great Tower, and Four Towers. Here is how Arnel explained the function of the Four Towers:

“The Four Towers have each a group of buildings of their own. I cannot give you their names, but you may write them down as the Tower of Sleeping Life, which you would call mineral; the Tower of Dreaming Life, which you would call vegetable; the Tower of Waking Life, which you would call animal; and the Tower of Consciousness, which you would call human.” [\[88\]](#)

The names are significant. Everything around us is actually life. The stones, the flowers, the walls of our house. Not that they are living according to our definition, but they are living because they have been fashioned by the wills of great and high spirits. They are living because they have been formed with Universal Fluid, which is the building block of all creations – from mineral to our physical bodies. Everything is fashioned out

of a primal element, and only the vibration, the density, and patterns are modified to create all. And all is held into place by force of will. Will supplied by spirits much greater than we.

It is this created universe that is studied by the University.

Arnel goes on to describe the other facilities:

“The Great Tower is the Tower of Angelic Life, which watches over all those forms of life below it in degree of progress, and also crowns them all. For towards the Angelic order is all the lower creation moving.

These Towers are served by the House of the Dome, and to it they turn for any specific item of knowledge they need in their work of research and classification. On the powers generated within the Dome House they rely to help them in that matter.” [\[89\]](#)

According to Arnel, all of the buildings have a mystical significance. Their very layout and the pattern of edifices represent the stages of creation. The Great Tower is in itself a complex and multi-layered structure:

“The Tower is built of double walls, and on all four sides there are rooms and halls and dwelling-places of Angels. So as you gaze aloft you see here a doorway, there a balcony or a hanging window, or a bridge will shoot from one dwelling to another, in a curved outward over space, and inward again to its destination. Or a diagonal line on the wall will show where a flight of steps goes from one house or pleasure to another. Even gardens are there, planted on broad ledges thrust out from the sidewalls of the Tower. And so high and so wide is this great shaft that those items which are of roomy proportions when you mount up to them from within, yet do not impede the view into the sky above, nor alter the contour of the opening atop.” [\[90\]](#)

The Great Tower must be magnificent to behold, but true astonishment lies in who lives in it:

“This Great Tower supervises the work of the other four, and the Dome draws from here the power required for its work. Here reside Angels of great rank, and come and go from very high realms to give of their mighty strength and far-flung experience, to aid those who now seek to treat the way they went before ages ago. Those whose abode is in the

Four Towers and the Dome House are doing, in the present eternity, what themselves did in eternities bygone, whose denizens have passed on in the cycle of progress, and left their place to be possessed by the present race.” [\[91\]](#)

When Arnel speaks of eternities, we should begin to grasp the scope of where we are and where we are going. The entire system of planets to promote spirits is one of sending wave after wave of spirits up the ladder of education and knowledge. Where no one advances without purity of heart combined with learning.

We may toil in college after college in the spheres of our local heaven until we look down and no longer recognize the surface of the earth, and still not yet attain citizenship in the vast University of the Five Towers. Or we may leap upwards in constant intellectual devotion and emotional ecstasy - it is all up to us.

Spirits who have graduated the tenth sphere and entered the path of creation – what that exactly means I do not yet fathom, but Jesus is reported to live at the fifteenth level and he help formed the solar system and planets in which we live in.

These wise and learned spirits come back to help those who are still striving to improve themselves. Such altruistic behavior should come as no surprise, for their very desire to be of service is what helped them achieve their Angelic status.

Immortality gives us the opportunity to engage in whatever intellectual pursuit we find most interesting. Physical death is nothing, except a reentry back into a universe of infinite variation. Earth life is but one of the sequences of advancement, use it to shape your character – remove your pride and selfishness – prepare yourself for great possibilities.



Chapter 19 – To Create One Must Think in Spirals – Education in the 10th Sphere of Heaven

In the impressive city of learning – the University of the Five Towers, there was a manifestation by Jesus. He brought with Him examples of creation from planets throughout the universe. As if by magic, an entire convention floor opened up and presented wide avenues and paths for the students to explore the act of creation from many points of view and of systems throughout our universe.

On March 11, 1918, the spirit Arnel told the [Rev. G. Vale Owen](#), about the pleasure of visiting the Creative Hierarchies, which appeared during the Manifestation in the Crown Hall:

“With a company of fellow-students, I essayed into the scenes around us, and at once I found that all had been arranged for our convenience in gathering knowledge such as would be helpful to us. All was planned out orderly. Broad avenues of great length, fading into the distance, were laid between the great orders of Creation. But, inasmuch as none of these were entirely separate one from another, these avenues were not merely divisions, nor roads for traverse, but were in themselves departments blending those on either hand.

As we walked down these we were struck with the fact that certain principles were evident, as observed by all the Creative Princes loyally. And these principles were essentially the same whether they were applied to mineral or vegetable or animal life. This is but reason when you remember that all the glamour of the diversity, so rich in wisdom and ingenuity, as displayed in those departments most evolved, had grown out of the first simple aggregation of elements, through long ages of progress, first in a few apparently trivial departures from the simple into the complex, until at length we have the richness of flamboyant display as we see it today.” [\[92\]](#)

These student angels, who have toiled so diligently, through hard lives, difficult missions, and countless hours of study in the first ten levels of

heaven were ecstatic to see the fruits of what they have been taught. For they too, would one day exhibit their creations to curious students.

The Theme of the Spiral

As the spirit Arnel walked through the celestial booths and viewed creations modest and intricate, he noticed a central theme of how creation builds upon a base and becomes more complex. He told G. Vale Owen:

“We saw, as we went down one avenue, how worlds were made. On the left hand, as we went, we saw how the thought of God, vibrating and pulsing outward, became, by degrees, of denser element, until it issued into what you call ether. Here we were able to notice the nature of the movement, and we saw that it was spiral, but that, as any certain wave reached the top of the spiral, it continued its course by a descent, also of spiral form, but now within the atom of ether. So that the inner spiral, having a more constricted space to work in, the descent was of greater speed than that of the outer spiral. Emerging from the lower end of the atom at a greatly increased velocity the vibrations were able, of their own momentum, to continue again their outer course upward, but at a rate of movement ever a little slower, until the top was reached, and the descent begun anew interiorly, and with ever-gathering velocity.

These atoms were not round, nor were they true oval, but, by reason of the ceaseless movement within themselves, elliptic. The motive power of their self-contained motion was a gravitational pressure exerted from without, and, if we could have chased it to its source, I think that we should have found that the dynamo from which it proceeded was the Mind of God. You will note that I use the words ‘top’ and ‘bottom’, ‘up’ and ‘down,’ for convenience only. There is no top nor bottom to an atom of ether.” [\[93\]](#)

Hence, via a spiral elliptical motion, with different speeds of rotation within a tiny building block, Arnel saw the power of God. And what was the source of the gravitational pressure to maintain the spinning of the element? Was it God or was it the thought or will of a high spirit? Could that be one of the methods of how high creative spirits mold and keep in place their momentous creations?

There are many questions one could ask to delve deeper into what Arnel saw, but we should realize, we won't be spoon-fed scientific breakthroughs – that is our task to discern the secrets of our natural laws.

On the other hand, we can compare what was told to G. Vale Owen to what we know today.

The Atom As We Know It

It is difficult to adequately summarize what is known about the atom and its cycling of electrons around a nucleus (made up of neutrons and protons), without diving into too much detail. Suffice to say, that originally it was thought, by Bohrs and others that electrons orbited around a nucleus in a circular manner but it is now thought to be more of an elliptical journey, just like our earth is around the sun.

Additionally, it is surmised that the elements orbiting on the outside of the atom travel slower than the elements (with a greater atomic number) closer to the center.

Bohrs and Rutherford first came up with their theory in 1913, subsequent theories since then about atoms and their respective neutrons, protons, and electrons have seen these elements broken down into even smaller sub-atomic particles.

All of the above is only important in context as to what Arnel told G. Vale Owen about his observations of creation in 1918. Therefore, what was revealed wasn't a new theory, but one can be certain that only a small coterie of people knew about the theory when G. Vale Owen received his communications. And, Arnel specifically described an elliptical path as opposed to a circular orbit.

Building Upon the Spiral

Arnel next took the basic design of the ethereal atom and compared it to what we have in our physical universe:

“Now I have described this to you in order that it may form a model for you when you pursue the atom of ether into other substances of denser sort. When we came to those atoms which form the gases of your earth atmosphere we found that they also had a like motion. Each circulated

upon itself in precisely the same way as the atom of ether. There were minor differences: the spiral was, in some cases, elongated, in others compressed; the movement was of greater speed or less. But all these movements were spiral, both without and within the atom.

When we came to the atom of the mineral we found the same principle to hold.

And what is true in the single atom obtains also in the atom in aggregate. The movement of the atoms of a planet is spiral. But here it is much retarded by reason of the grossness of the matter which goes to form a planet.

The same is also true of the movement of satellites, and of planets about suns, and of suns about their center.

But both the mass and also the density of a unit affect the rate of velocity. The speed of the movement of their atoms is slower in those planets which have attained to more density than in others. But even in these the rule holds good that the interior movement is quicker than that on their outer surface, which drags after it very slowly, as if reluctant to move at all. But move it does, and that movement is in the form of a spiral about its axis.” [\[94\]](#)

We live in a dense universe, we live on a planet of atonement. As we pass over to the spirit world we become less dense and as we ascend we become more energy and less matter. But our planet remains the same; but does it?

Arnel hints that a whole world's density could be less than other worlds. Does he mean the difference between the Earth and the planet Jupiter (a gas giant versus our planet with a crust and a molten core)? Or does he refer to a different state altogether of a planet? Hence, could it be implied there are degrees of density in planets in other dimensions? As the earth moves to a planet of regeneration will the entire planet become less dense? *The Spirits Book* tells us that as souls are incarnated on higher level planets (happy worlds), humans are lighter and glide as much as walk. It may be that not only our spirit that is transformed by ascending to another level, but the planet will also be transformed.

Examine what we are told of happy worlds, the level after a planet of regeneration. Two steps up from where we reside. On happy worlds, we still retain our human form, although the senses are more acute. The body changes, as described in *The Gospel According to Spiritism*, “The specific lightness of the body enables rapid and easy locomotion; instead of dragging itself laboriously over the ground, it glides – so to speak – over the surface or sails through the air with no other effort than that of the will, in the way in which angels are portrayed.” ^[95] With the improvement in their bodies, the years of infancy and adolescent are shorter, while the average lifespan is much longer than on earth today.

All of this points to the theory that as our planet ascends there will be less density in ourselves, the atmosphere, and given what was told to G. Vale Owen, in the planet itself.

Not only is matter transformed but the culture and society. Politically on such worlds, “relationships between nations are always friendly and are never disturbed by the ambition of dominating their neighbor, or by war, which is its consequence. There are no masters, slaves or privileges of birth; only moral and intellectual ascendancy establish the differences of conditions and confer supremacy. Authority is always respected, for it is conferred only on those who have merit and it is always exercised with justice.” ^[96]

The Origin of All

Arnel next described what he found out when he was able to learn about the beginning of the spirit universe.

“We found that the great Lords of Creation begin their work farther back than the etheric atom, and nearer the origin of all. Still, those who deal with the etheric evolution, and onward, are very great and ancient Lords. We therefore went forward to study these vibrations of thought-power where they were more retarded by the density of the material in which they moved. And we found that one of the most difficult tasks we students had ahead of us was to think and to will in the proper way. For to deal with matter creatively the first thing to master is to think in spirals. I cannot further explain that to you. But it is a most difficult habit to achieve: to think spirally.” ^[97]

The Big Bang theory postulates that everything in our universe could be traced back to a single point – a point of an extremely high energy density. Which is comparable to what Arnel said, “They were retarded by the density of the material in which they moved.” Did the great Lords of Creation use that homogenous material to create all other matter in the universe? From the description given by Arnel, it seems they did.

What is even more interesting is the necessity to think spirally. What does this mean? How does one apply spiral thinking? Most of us think in a problem solving context. We analyze a problem, think of a solution and then devise a path to get to our objective.

To understand spiral thinking, it may be helpful to consider software. Applications aren’t an end to itself. Software applications are a process, a procedure to get you what or where you wish to go. Software starts out with defects, but over time the defects are repaired and the entire process flows more smoothly, more efficiently.

Hence, I believe, that what Arnel meant by spiral thinking, is the setting up a self-repairing process, or a self-generating process – that makes forward motion – advancement toward a goal – then circles back to fix any errors in the attainment of that objective. This system could go on and on.

Spiral thinking could explain all of our discovered natural laws. We live in a cosmos of self-generating life, where planets form and are destroyed, then form again out of the resulting cosmic dust, where life depends upon the destruction of other lives. Where we travel through one life, only to be cleansed of our defects in the next life.

Truly, the system created by God is amazing.



Chapter 20 – Education in the Higher Levels of Heaven

Eyes are opened as one travels upward. Possibilities never imagined are presented and dissected. The power of the will, the full force of faith is discussed and analyzed.

As one ascends higher, one begins to realize our earthly concept of God, our history, our solar system, our evolution was in error. We believed what we were told, because that is the easier and more comfortable path. But as soon as one begins at the lower levels and moves ahead, the hidden story starts to be in focus.

The entire evolution of earth, all life on the planet, has been guided from the start. How even the smallest details are arranged and tracked are in the lessons plans of the higher spheres of heaven.

Nothing is accomplished without a reason. Spirits in lower planes and us on earth ... can't detect the method or the purpose of events. But they all begin to make sense the higher one goes.

With this knowledge is added insights into the process, procedures, rules, and customs of the spirit realm. A fuller understanding of how the spirit universe operates is supplied.

Spirits are trained to use the additional capabilities given to them to focus their minds, query after vital data, and to communicate with experts in time of need. All prerequisites for which come next.

The base of knowledge required to begin to spawn evolution; of plant life, animals, and human or human-like progress over millions and billions of years is supplied. Just like a Graduate degree, where intimate understanding of concepts and the opportunity to work beside leading people in their field, provides the breadth of knowledge required to step up and begin a Doctorate degree.

The tenth sphere and below in heaven is one of preparation. Above it, instead of writing papers which illustrate your grasp of important concepts, you begin to expand the base of knowledge and invent.

The act of creation is what awaits above the tenth level of heaven.



Section 3 – Spirit Attributes

Spirits have capabilities and tools at their command just like the rest of us. Except, of course, their capabilities and tools are more than we could ever dream of having in our physical universe. What are those extra capabilities, super powers, and toolkits that any dreaming fourteen-year-old boy would die for? This is precisely what we begin find out in the following section.

I am sure what we are told by spirits communicating to the Rev. G. Vale Owen and other Spiritist mediums is but a fraction of their true extent. Much of what is revealed is done so with commentary by spirits that describe the difficulty of explaining complex ideas and objects in the narrow confines of the limits of human society, technology, and mind.

The difficulty of one society based upon different natural laws communicating to another society was first broached by Socrates in his Allegory of the Cave. In the cave there were men; chained to the wall, with a fire behind them. They could only see the movement of shadows and flickering light. In essence they lived in a two dimensional world, of moveable objects, height and width traveling on the surface of the wall. Like watching two dimensional films in a theater today.

One man escaped and exited the cave into the sunlight. For the first time he was able to see depth. He experienced a bright world bathed in sunlight, with robust objects traveling to and fro. He was so excited that he wanted to share his discovery with his fellow prisoners. He walked back to the cave, waited long enough for his eyes to readjust to the dim light, and journeyed on to where the others awaited.

He told them about the bright light, the fact that objects didn't just have two dimensions but three. He expounded on the wondrous new world he discovered. The others thought him mad and killed him before his insanity could spread.

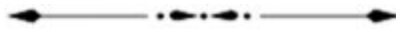
Many philosophers have interpreted Socrates' allegory, but all have missed the vital point. While the allegory could indeed have pertinence to how we perceive the world and the limitation of our ability to absorb new

knowledge or the role of freedom, the fact is Socrates was preparing us for something larger.

Socrates was telling us about the differences between our world, the physical realm, and the spirit world. We live in three dimensions, with time moving forward. In the spirit realm, we shall live in four dimensions. With the added affect that as a spirit ascends, that spirit can see an object from beginning to end in a longer time frame. A higher spirit doesn't see only a table, but the trees that grew to make the table, the process of manufacturing the table, the use of the table, and the deterioration of the table. How does one explain that to us on earth?

In one of the communications to the Rev. G. Vale Owen, he asked for a more detailed description of a house in one of the higher levels of heaven. The spirit told him that it would be like trying to describe Westminster Abbey to a fish.

Hence, read on and be kind to my interpretations, for I confess my inadequacy upfront to fully analyze and comprehend the full range of what is available and what composes a spirit. I fully expect to be castigated upon my arrival to that lowly level of which I hope to be fortunate enough to reach - about how far off I was in everything I thought I understood.



Chapter 21 - Sight and Touch as a Spirit

How does a spirit see and touch? G. Vale Owen's mother tells him from the other side.

In the Reverend Owen's book, which is a collection of four of his books, *Life Beyond the Veil*, in *The Lowlands of Heaven* section, where his mother tells him about her life and work in one of the first level of heaven, there is a short paragraph where she describes how a spirit sees an incarnate. Vale Owen asks his mother, "Are you able to see me as I sit here writing?"

She responds:

"We do see you, but with other eyes than yours. Our eyes are not accustomed to the effect of light as you have it on earth. Our light is of a different kind, a sort of interpenetrating element by which we are able to discern your inmost mind, and that is it to which we speak – to you yourself and not, of course, to your outward ears. So it is yourself we see, and not your material body, which is but an enveloping robe." [\[98\]](#)

Spirits are creatures of an invisible world to us, but our world is not hidden from them. They can see right through our flesh and bones and determine the location of our spirit. Our thoughts are as open as a baby's feelings. And, whether we know it are not, we receive communication from spirits.

This transfer of messages is constant, for thoughts from humans and spirits are transmitted like radio waves. A small minority of us are able to discern a miniscule portion of the tidal wave of ideas and emotions which roll over us. I have no talent in that direction, but I do wonder if my good or bad ideas at any particular time are really my own, or am I subconsciously translating the ether of pure contemplations that I move about in like a fog.

Our ability to filter the positive radiations from the negative is one of the reasons why we are sent here. We are directed to learn to use our conscience to correctly collate the worthwhile ideas while discarding any notion which may cause physical or emotional harm to ourselves or others. Sounds like the teenage years! The analogy is valid, for we are on earth to start to build real character.

G. Vale Owen's mother also explains what it means when a spirit touches you:

“When we touch you, therefore, you do not feel the touch physically but spiritually, and if you wish to apprehend our touch, you will have to keep this in mind and look deeper than the body and its mechanical brain.” [\[99\]](#)

We are being told that our brain has inherent limits. Our spirit is connected to our body (and brain) via the perispirit. It is the perispirit that transmits all data back and forth. Our physical brain is not able to receive the full knowledge of our spirit selves. That would be too much and hinder our educational process while in our present state. But we can teach ourselves to inwardly peer into our spiritual side and begin to sense the warmth of our spiritual mentors.



Chapter 22 – Even Angels of Darkness Become Good Eventually.

In our culture, in our mythology, when one thinks of the powerful Lords of Hell, a vision of a twisted devil emerges who personifies evil. Eternal evil. According to Spiritism, no spirit ignores the light forever, it may just seem so.

In the Reverend Owen's book, which is a collection of four of his books, *Life Beyond the Veil*, in *The Lowlands of Heaven* section, his mother recounts a story about a woman in her level who experiences problems because she is not reunited with her husband.

Vale Owen's mother was part of a small group when they meditated how to assist the woman. They were given a vision of a smaller man bowing down to a larger man. After a time, the larger man lifted the lesser man up and let him go on his way.

The group didn't know how to interpret this vision, so they enlisted the help of a higher spirit. She told them to let the woman know to proceed to the bridge, where spirits who are residing in the Umbral, or Lower Zone, come to pass over to the first level of heaven.

The high spirit explained that the larger figure was an Angel of Darkness, a powerful Lord in the Underworld, who had allowed the woman's husband to leave and journey to heaven to meet his wife. The group was astounded, they asked how such an evil person could be capable of good.

The high spirit answered them:

“My dear friends, the kingdom of God our Father is a very much more wonderful place than you seem to imagine. You never yet have met with a realm or sphere which was complete in itself, and independent and separate from all other spheres. Nor are there any such. That dark angel blends within his nature many spheres of knowledge and goodness and badness. He remains where he is first because of the badness remaining in him and which unfits him for the regions of light.

He remains also because, while he could progress if he would, yet he does not wish to do so at present, partly because of his obstinacy, and partly because he still hates the light, and thinks those who set out upon the awful uphill way fools because the pains and agonies are sharper then, by reason of the contrast which they see between the light and the darkness.” [\[100\]](#)

We are being told that everyone, at all times, can exercise their free-will. No one is forced to ascend. Whatever notion a person holds, however delusional or self-destructive, is their own business. This is remarkable because higher spirits could, if they so choose, manipulate the mind of a lower spirit to any direction they wished. Even though a new perspective would actually make life easier for the misguided spirit.

This proves the spirit realm doesn't work to manufacture robots, even robots who do well. They wish all souls to retain their idiosyncrasies and to bring to the higher levels their particular strengths.

When the high spirit talked about the “pains and agonies” of those who strive to go uphill in the light, she was referring to the fact that as a spirit ascends, their mind becomes clearer and more able to focus. This results in a more careful analysis of their past wrong deeds and a bitter feeling of the harm they had done to others.

The high spirit continues to explain what went on in the dark Angel's mind:

“He had tortured and ill-treated the same man whom you saw with him from time to time, and that with the cruelty of a cowardly bully, But, as you saw, that wore itself out, and, when the man pleaded this last time, some soft chord in the heart of the other vibrated just a little, and, on the impulse, fearing a reversal of his intention, he liberated the victim who wished to make the journey, and pointed out to him the way, no doubt thinking in his heart that he was a fool and yet, perhaps, a wiser fool than he, after all.” [\[101\]](#)

Hence, a small flame of kindness survives in a dark heart. No one is all bad, there is good in everyone. Then comes an enlightening statement about the potential of this mal-intentioned spirit in the land of darkness. The high spirit tells us:

“There are, as we know, many ‘angels of darkness’ who are in the darkness because of some twist in their natures, some obstinate trait which prevents the good in them having its effect. And these one day may pass us on the road of ages, and become greater in the Kingdom of the Heavens than we who now are more blessed than they.” [\[102\]](#)

The very same characteristics which made the poor soul an effective lord of evil, when turned to the good, could conceivably make this same person an effective angel of mercy. For instead of focusing his energy and intellect on cruel machinations, he could someday harness his considerable leadership qualities on benevolent acts.

In short, there is never a dead end for any soul in the universe. The person who you revile today, has the capacity to generate goodness in the future. Understanding, caring, and forgiveness is the message sent to us by Christ and is part and parcel of the Divine Law which guides us all.



Chapter 23 – Higher Level of Spirits have a Wider Range of Travel and Sight in the Spirit World

When you return to life as a spirit you will enter a realm in which thought is action. Where succeeding levels of heaven confer increasing capabilities. In the Reverend Owen's book, which is a collection of four of his books, *Life Beyond the Veil*, in *The Lowlands of Heaven* section, his mother tells him what to expect on one of the first levels of heaven:

“If a man could take his stand here on some one of the high summits with which this landscape is crowned, he would hold some rather strange and unfamiliar sights. For instance, he would probably first observe that the air was clear, and that distance had a different aspect from that it wears on earth. It would not seem far away in the same sense, for, if he wished to leave the summit on which he stood and go to some point near the horizon, or even beyond, he would do so by means of his will, and it would depend on the quality of that will, and his own nature, whether he went fast or slow; and also how far he could penetrate into the regions which lie beyond the various mountain ranges and whose – I suppose we shall have to use the word – atmosphere is of rarer quality than that in which his present lot is cast.” [\[103\]](#)

Vale Owen's mother is telling us what the books by Francisco (Chico) C. Xavier have also revealed. Spirits move by thought, called volitation in the books by the spirit Andre Luiz. When a spirit first arrives, they are usually unable to command their movement by thought, but as they learn and acclimate themselves to their new surroundings, they are able to travel at the speed of thought. There is no upper limit of speed, as the speed of light is in our universe.

When Vale Owen's mother talks about what regions a spirit is able to penetrate, she is exposing one of the primary tenets of life in the spirit plane. We, incarnates, on earth are made of dense matter, spirits who live amongst and below us are slightly less dense, hence we can't see them.

Spirits that dwell around us, only have the power to move around earth and below by thought. They are unable to rise above their level.

The same is true in the levels of heaven. In the beginning level, where G. Vale Owen's mother lives, she and her friends are able to travel to the surface immediately. She is also able to travel around the first levels by means of her will power alone. But, she is not able to go to the higher levels of heaven. This is the rule for each successive stage. Spirits may travel downward at will, but they are not able to become less dense, meaning more and more pure energy, until they acquire the required qualifications to be allowed to live in the next level. Hence, as you rise, your freedom of movement expands, until some future time, when you will be able to roam the universe(s) at will.

Vale Owen's mother further explains the differences between the spirits on different levels:

“It is on account of this that we do not always see those messengers who come to us from the higher spheres. They are seen by some better than by others, and are only truly and definitely visible when they so condition their bodies as to emerge into visibility. Now, if we go too far in their direction – that is, in the direction of their home – we feel an exhaustion which disables us to penetrate farther, although some are able to go farther than others.” [\[104\]](#)

Just like a dog gets use to the parameters of their world when their owners have an invisible fence, we in our spirit form, are limited in the same manner. In a most natural fashion our boundaries are set. We are just physically unable to go regions which are beyond our capabilities.

We are not trapped forever in our cage, all we need to do is to apply ourselves and learn the path to the light, through love, charity, fraternity, and to intellectually apply ourselves to whatever task on hand that is assigned to us.

Far Vision

Next, Vale Owen's mother lets us in on another attribute that is expanded as a spirit rises in hierarchy:

“Again, standing on that summit, the observer would notice that the firmament was not exactly opaque to the vision, but rather in the nature of light, but light of a quality which intensifies as the distance from the surface of the landscape increases. And some are able to look farther into that light than others, and to see there beings and scenes enacting which others less developed are not able to see.” [\[105\]](#)

It is hard to fully comprehend the immense power of a high spirit. The range of movement and the ability to see through mountains and dimensions is but one aspect. In a land where thought is action, the most dedicated, the highest achievers, those who are adept in all aspects are the leaders.

Vale Owen’s mother explains the full breadth of what the power of thought signifies:

“Also, he would see all around him dwellings and buildings of various kinds, some of which I have described. But those buildings would not be merely houses and work-places and colleges to him. From each structure he would read not its character so much as the character of those who built it and those who inhabit it. Permanent they are, but not of the same dull permanency as those of earth. They can be developed and modified and adapted, in color, shape and material, according as the need should require. They would not have to be pulled down, and then the material used in rebuilding. The material would be dealt with as the building stood. Time has no effect on our buildings. They do not crumble or decay. Their durability depends simply on the wills of their masters, and so long as these will, the building stands, and then is altered as they will.” [\[106\]](#)

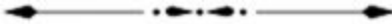
Spirits live in a world of logical constructs. We read books about conjuring, bringing forth objects from our mind, it is a reality in the place you shall return to. A single or a group of spirits concentrate on what they want to construct and build it by their focus of mental energy.

Doesn’t this explain why we are being trained to become civilized beings on earth? Don’t we have to remove any trace of malice, jealousy, envy, desire for revenge, selfishness from ourselves before we are ready for such power? Would you dare to live on a planet, where anyone could walk by, destroy your house, dematerialize whichever object they desired? Only

in a world full of kind and loving souls could people live together amidst such ultimate force.

It is as if, you were walking in a city where each citizen was fully armed, but you felt perfectly safe, because you knew that you were loved and cherished by all. The weapons on their sides only meant that you were safe, that no harm could ever come to you as long as you were protected by such benign spirits.

This is why we must train on earth to live through chaos and suffering to free ourselves of our baser inclinations, before we can graduate to paradise. You have to earn utopia, they don't let just anyone in, and once you are there, you wouldn't want them to change their rules.



Chapter 24 - Three Methods Spirits Communicate with Each Other

Spirits talk, they gesture, they write books – everything we do ... except more. They can link mind to mind, not only when they are near, but from afar. And they have various methods to send messages – it all depends on their respective environment and spiritual level.

Arnel tells the [Rev. G. Vale Owen](#), how spirits communicate, in a message sent on December 14, 1920. Arnel was recounting how new spirits to the fourth sphere were acclimatized to the condition on that sphere, when he brought up the subject of teaching languages.

The Rev. G. Vale Owen's lack of adequate words to describe exactly how spirits speak to each other caused Arnel to supply needed detail in the different processes of interaction:

“We speak to each other here in ways more than one. We speak by word of mouth in the lower spheres. That is how I tell you of it in its outward seeming. In any wise, these words are vibrations as are yours; and so the term will serve. Then we speak by picture flashes. A mental picture is flashed from one brain to another near or distant; it may be seen at times, this flashing, like a sword of light darting from the lips and eyes into the atmosphere around where it loses visibility. When it reaches its destination the picture is set up before the mind of the recipient and, according to the character of the message, it is invisible to a near companion, or he is sensible of its arrival by a luminescence ambient about the person of him to whom the message is sent.

Then we speak also spirit direct with spirit, But this is used between the more developed, and seldom in the lower spheres.

Here are three ways, each distinct in its own operative method. But there are also others; and there also are ways by which these may be blended in composite. Thus let me posit it, is Habdi in the Sphere Two, and I in the Sphere Seven; and I wish to send him a message. Now he,

being conditioned to that lower Sphere at that time, his inner self would be latent. In order, therefore, that he should not mistake my exact meaning, I would both project the message itself to him, and also flash it in pictorial form; and he would verify the one by the other, and no error would ensue.” [\[107\]](#)

Everything is connected in the spirit realm, and there are multiple ways to achieve any connection so desired. Arnel himself, illustrates a combination of non-verbal interfaces to achieve an error free transmission. Our present technology has only within the last forty or so years discovered methods to ensure one hundred percent accurate delivery of information packets.

Arnel’s ability to utilize various communication procedures points to the attributes of a spirit. Arnel doesn’t mention possessing a cell phone, or a telephone, or any other external apparatus. Therefore, within his personality, his spirit body, he contains considerable capability to initiate and send and receive conversations to any identifiable spirit across great distances, dimensions, and environments.

In the book *Nosso Lar* , dictated to [Francisco \(Chico\) C. Xavier](#) , by the spirit Andre Luiz, in 1944; Andre Luiz, newly arrived in the spirit realm was experiencing problems and tried to think of a way to contact help:

“During this emergency, I remembered one of Tobias’s lessons when he had told me: ‘Here, in Nosso Lar, not all of us need an airbus for transportation, because the more elevated inhabitants of the colony have the power of volitation at their disposal. Nor do all of us need communication equipment to converse over long distances, because we mutually maintain ourselves on a plane of perfect thought attunement. Those who are attuned in this way may use the process of mental conversation at will, regardless of the distance.’ “ [\[108\]](#)

Andre Luiz confirms what was told by Arnel to G. Vale Owen in 1920. Less mature spirits don’t possess the capability to speak mind to mind. In addition, he tells us that this deficient is mitigated by giving a device for communication, which Francisco Xavier’s mother told him in a message from the spirit realm, were called personal communication devices, aka cell phones – this dispatch was received in the 1930s. Hence, there is nothing

that we have invented here that wasn't in place in the spirit realm long before.

The Universal Language is Thought

Fast forward to 2010, the medium Divaldo Franco psychographed a book by the spirit Manoel Philomeno De Miranda. The book, *Planetary Transition*, tells of the help given to the tsunami survivors of the great underwater earthquake in the Indian Ocean in 2004.

During one episode, the recently dead are slowly awakening to the fact that physical life was a mere interlude in their immortal existence. A group of ill-intentioned spirits were waiting to take advantage of these groggy souls. A rescue team of advance spirits were on hand and wished to proceed without interference from the gang of spirits, who by their nefarious deeds and ties to earth had not risen to the light.

One of the leaders of the rescue teams stepped forward and talked to the gang. He convinced them to fall back and let the operation proceed without interference. Manoel asked the spirit, who had last incarnated in the United States, how he could communicate with this motley band. He was told:

“I utilized mental waves without verbalization in words. Under the circumstances and the thought that developed the waves, those afflicted brothers *heard* in their own language because we were vibrating on the same track of thought. On the other hand, the members of our group *heard* the dialogue in the language with which we communicate with one another. Since our group is composed of spirits from different countries, our communication is mental, without the need for oral expression formulated in the patterns of each language.

The language of the universe is thought, which modulates expressions according to the reception of each listener. The task of interpreting language belongs to the perispirit, which has stored the idiomatic matrices of the countries we have lived in during our many corporeal lives. Even when we meet those from regions where we have never reincarnated, their mind captures and decodes the thought waves. Everything happens automatically and naturally, without effort. Even so, when there is an attunement of ideas, interests or desires, the phenomenon becomes more efficient and quicker.

During my discussion with the leader of the rebel flock, I used formulations of the English language, which were heard in Indonesian, Portuguese and Tagalog, and also by our collaborators, depending on their country of origin.” [\[109\]](#)

We are told that our minds, our spirit brains, universally work along the same principles so we may transmit information directly from one spirit to another. The prerequisite is that we attune ourselves to receive the thoughts radiating from the other spirit. And if we are on a similar level, then communication is rapid and efficient.

The new information that I haven't read before is that in our perispirit resides the universal translator, keeping every language that we have ever been exposed to. This is logical because the perispirit is the connector between our spirit and our physical body. Everything that we do, while incarnate, is passed onto our spirit. Hence upon return we shall have total recall of every moment we spent on earth.

The spirit mind is full of automatic processes, just the same as our physical brain. Our bodies are kept running by our autonomic nervous system, all vital functions are controlled without any need for expressed thought. The same must occur while we are in spirit form. Communications arrive, are translated, and sent to the mind for deliberate thinking, all without overt action on our part.

Speaking with Aliens – Through Pictures

Arnel also references transmission of thought through images. Again, in the book *Planetary Transition*, Manoel speaks about a delegation of spirits from another planet, who are on earth to assist us in achieving the next level.

Currently the earth is a planet of atonement, a place where we must travel through difficult trials to fully form our character, to make ourselves ready for the complex tasks that await us. These visitors were from an advanced planet, a planet of regeneration, where they no longer live amongst immature spirits, where hate, envy, and war are things of the past.

Manoel conveys how he and others communicated with these souls from another heaven which surrounds an advanced planet:

“The words in my vocabulary are insufficient for repeating their narrations, transmitted through mental projection, giving us an imperfect idea of the kingdom that awaits all of us on the sublime march of evolution.” [\[110\]](#)

Lacking a common language, a shared set of concepts, and being from two different levels of planets made direct mind to mind communication difficult. Therefore, the thoughts of these spiritually advanced people were sent via pictures. Images would appear, series of pictures, possibly snippets of movies, like we send to one another via smart phones. These would serve to adequately convey meaning from spirits so dissimilar.

Arnel told us about transmissions via images in 1920 and in 2010, another spirit, Manoel, reinforces the concepts presented to the Rev. G. Vale Owen.

Sermons by Jesus

High spirits may also send images to our, physical minds. This is why we sometimes get flashes of vital information or a picture of a loved one. This power was used by a very high spirit who incarnate on earth – Jesus Christ.

In another book by a Spiritist medium, *Memoirs of a Suicide* , a spirit is introduced, who in one of his previous lives, was one of the children welcomed by Jesus when, he said, “Let the little children come to me, because the kingdom of heaven is theirs...”

The spirit Anibal is introduced with the following interesting piece of information:

“He says that when the Lord preached his gentle Doctrine of Love, marvelously precise, elucidating images appeared unexpectedly before the eyes of the listeners of goodwill, enlightening them in an unmistakable manner and imprinting never to be forgotten illustrations on the folds of their being! That is why the great Envoy, preaching in unshakeable serenity, could hold the attention of famished multitudes for hours on end, control turbulent mobs, enrapture listeners, and convince hearts that would either prostrate themselves, fearful and dazed, when he passed by, or adhere, faithful and enchanted, to His

Doctrine. The impious, however, those whose rebellious minds were in discord with the divine vibrations, perceived nothing.” [\[111\]](#)

The description given added evidence to the capability of sending vivid scenes. Only those who were attuned to Jesus’ sermon saw the image projected.

[Spiritism](#), the Third Revelation, codified by [Allan Kardec](#) in the 1850s, is a Doctrine which is dedicated to bring us knowledge of the spirit world and our place within it. The spirit realm presents this new information so we may begin to understand why we must strive through life so we may toil to improve ourselves to live life in the paradise that is heaven.

What has been told to us is just the beginning. As we progress, our culture, our technology, our spirituality – more shall be revealed. The spirit realm may only transmit visions of heaven and the spirit universe to the level upon which we may comprehend. Thus, as we improve, we shall be fed more to satisfy our hunger to learn about life after death.



Chapter 25 – Spiritual Degrees of Brightness and the Law of Affinity.

Spirits see each other in varying degrees of brightness. The light a spirit detects is the reflection of spirituality and pureness which exists in the heart and body of a spirit. A spirit from the tenth level of heaven, Zabdiel, explains how the level of light within each spirit determines their place in the hierarchy of the spirit realm:

“As we stand on the earth plane, where I stand now, and look through the Veil of difference of condition which is between us and you in the earth life, we often see many people at one time, and sometimes but a few. These people differ in brightness according to the degree of holiness in each; that is, according to the degree in which each individual in himself is able to reflect the divine light of spirit which streams past and through us to you. Some appear very dim, and these, when they come over here, will go the regions dim or less according to their own dimness.” [\[112\]](#)

The process whereby souls are allocated to a certain region is called the Law of Affinity. The Law of Affinity is the great sifter, it is Saint Peter at the gate, determining who goes where. There are no questions, no tests, and no debate, you are placed amongst those who are like you.

[Allan Kardec](#), the [Codifier of Spiritism](#), publishes the answer from a collection of spirits about how spirits congregate. He is told, “Union exists between all spirits, but in different degrees, according to the rank they occupy – that is to say, according to the degree of perfection they have acquired; and the greater their perfection, the more united they are.” [\[113\]](#)

Allan Kardec, under the direction of the Spirit of Truth, brought the world [Spiritism](#) in the 1850’s. More than fifty years later, the [Reverend G. Vale Owen](#) communicated with a group of spirits, led by the spirit Zabdiel, the results of the sessions was documented in the book *The Highlands of Heaven*, which is part of a collection of four books, which are compiled in the book *Life Beyond the Veil*. The book was published in the 1920’s.

Next, [Francisco \(Chico\) C. Xavier](#), starting in the 1930's began psychographing messages and books from high spirits, all with the purpose of notifying the world about the Doctrine of Spiritism. Consistently, in literature published by Allan Kardec, G. Vale Owen, and Chico Xavier, the Law of Affinity is at the cornerstone of how spirits gather and are organized in the spirit realm.

Like Attracts Like

Zabdiel tells us how the Law of Affinity filters spirits and locates them with their brethren:

“So those whose radiance is great go into those spheres whose brightness agrees with their own; and every one into the sphere which agrees with his - be it less or more. But those whose bodies – spiritual bodies I mean – are of gross texture, and do not radiate much light, but are dim, go into those dim spheres where only they may be so much at ease that they may work out their own salvation. They are not at ease indeed in any sense of the word; but only they would be less at ease in a brighter sphere than in those dim regions until they have grown in brightness themselves.” [\[114\]](#)

After we separate from our physical bodies, we go to where we belong. The brighter travel to one of the levels of Heaven, the dimmer in one of the levels of the Lower Zone, and the darkest in [The Abyss](#), or purgatory as it is known to many.

The degree of brightness that we reflect is determined by our internalizing the Love of God within us. The more knowledgeable we are about the need to care, be fraternal, and honest with all fellow beings the greater our luminosity. As we grow in allowing love to permeate our entirety, the blemishes that we carry within us, such as envy and selfishness, become less pronounced; and solvable over time.

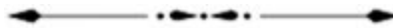
While those who are tied by material bonds to earth, who love possessions over people and see no wrong in fulfilling all of their desires at the expense of others are placed with their kin. They live in a world where others are similar to them, so they may see the true consequences of selfish behavior.

This is why it is important to work and study to increase your spirituality. To understand that we are on earth to learn to improve, to become better. As you ascend you will be granted the pleasure of being with others like you. With a group that cherishes and supports you. Allan Kardec explains how affiliated souls tend to stay with each other:

“These spirits happy at being together, seek out one another. Incarnation separates them only momentarily, because after their reentry into the errant state they meet again like friends who have returned from a journey. Frequently, they even follow one another into incarnation, wherein they are reunited in the same family or the same circle, working together for their mutual advancement.” [\[115\]](#)

The tight cluster of souls will watch out for each other. While some are incarnates on earth, others will look on from high and help guide the spirits going through their trials. Each helps everyone in the group to advance together. As they become purer, their friendship becomes more concrete, as their bodies divest themselves of matter. Petty jealousies and selfishness don't disrupt their relationships.

The more you open your heart and mind to the Spirituality, the Supreme Intelligence, the more you shall be helped in your quest for improvement. Whatever effort you expend in denying yourself pleasures in this life in order to help others, you shall be repaid a hundredfold when you re-enter the world from whence you came, the spirit realm.



Chapter 26 – Light in the Physical and Spiritual Spheres

Zabdiel, a spirit leader of a group of spirits, sent to communicate with the Rev. G. Vale Owen, presented the topic the degrees of light in the spheres. In essence the amount of light in each sphere is the response of the spirits, through their collective individual spiritual maturity to the amount of external light available to the sphere. These two interact to determine the brightness of any one sphere.

Zabdiel first explains light in our physical world. Light comes from the sun and shines where its rays penetrate. Darkness is merely the absence of light. Darkness to us, is in reality, a lack of a wavelength that our eyes can detect. Hence, the ability of our eyes is a constant, the more rays of light present, the brighter it is to our sense of sight.

In the spiritual spheres, the ability to detect light is not a constant, it is dependent upon the spiritual advancement of the individual. As I have discussed in the previous chapter, the brightness (for example, an angel glows with a white light) of a spirit comes from their ability to reflect the love of God. Which is regulated by their spiritual maturity and advancement. This level of attainment also provides a spirit to detect the amount of spiritual faith and light according to their own place in the hierarchy of spirits.

Zabdiel explains the difference of light in the physical and spiritual spheres, by first describing what it is like in the Lower Zone:

“For those who are in darkness are those whose sense of sight lacks the vibrations from without which enable others to have knowledge of those things which to them are external but present withal. Their state is a state of inability to receive these vibrations. When their spiritual facilities do undergo change then they are able to see more or less clearly.” [\[116\]](#)

As one rises up the ladder of spiritual knowledge and character, the body of a spirit has accompanying greater capabilities. This is a key point, it is as if Mother Theresa, was not only a kind and loving champion of the

poor, but she also had superhuman strength and senses; and she could see in the dark and through walls. In the spirit realm your abilities grow with your spirituality.

When a relatively higher spirit descends into a lower sphere, the light, even to their eyes, is not as bright. This is because of the working of the cumulative spiritual health of the sphere and its interaction with light. Zabdiel explains:

“But also these vibrations which convey the knowledge of things to their sense of sight are, in those regions, of a more gross quality than in the regions of spiritual health. So that even to those good spirits who penetrate into those regions, and whose sense of sight is more perfect, yet the darkness is quite apparent, and the light by which they see is dim. So that, as you will understand, there is a response between the spirit and the spirit’s environment, and that response is so accurate and perpetual and sustained as to constitute a permanent state of life.” [\[117\]](#)

Therefore, by the Law of Affinity, whereby spirits attract other spirits like themselves, their amassed spiritual quotient and the environment itself combine to create the atmospheric conditions of that plane, or sphere. While a higher spirit may have more spiritual force, it doesn’t change the environment of the sphere they have travelled to.

This holds true to all spiritual spheres, the environment is the sum of external light and collective spiritual power of its inhabitants. Zabdiel explains:

“As we go higher in the spheres this responsive action between the spirits and their environment is also maintained and that which we may call the external light becomes more and more perfect and intense the higher we go. So it is that those who dwell in, as we will say, the Fourth Sphere may not penetrate into the Fifth, to remain there, until they have become so developed as to sustain with ease the degree of intensity of light there obtaining. Having attained to that Fifth Sphere they soon become used to its light. And if they return to the Fourth, as they do from time to time, that Fourth Sphere seems dimmer to them, while still they are able to see with comparative ease. But if they should descent straight to the Second or First Sphere, they would only with difficulty be able to use those denser vibrations of light and, in order to do so, are

obliged to train themselves to see in that same sphere which once was but their normal abode.” [\[118\]](#)

As even humans do, spirit too become accustomed to their environment. When, on our physical plane, we live for a time in a hot desert environment, we are used to the heat, and when we journey to a colder location, we don heavy jackets, while the locals may still be in shorts. Unlike us, advanced spirits are able to alter their senses with the power of thought and they are able to modify the differences which occur when they travel downwards.

Spirits also come to our sphere to interact with us. Good spirits encourage positive behavior and present opportunities to acquire an understanding of what lies beyond our physical plane, while immature spirits motivate many to act out in ways that inferior spirits take pleasure in.

Zabdiel tells us how the higher spirits are able to come to the earth’s sphere and communicate with humans:

“When we come down to your earth sphere we see by reason of the spiritual light which men have in themselves. And those who are of higher spiritual grade than others we see so much the more clearly.

Were it not for faculties we possess other than that of sight, we should, as I suppose, have difficulty in finding our way about, and to those to whom we wish to come. But we have these other faculties, and by their use are able to do our work in ministering to you.

You will now be able to understand that there is a quite literal truth in the words, “Who dwells in light which no man can approach.” For few in the earth life are able to rise many spheres beyond; and the light which streams from above is blinding even to those who are much progressed.” [\[119\]](#)

We, who are temporarily encased in our physical bodies, swim in a sea of spirits. Spirits of many levels, some who have come to help us and others to hinder and take pleasure in our misdeeds. The more we learn about the types and capabilities of spirits the more we can filter out the negative influences and embrace the positive vibrations sent our way.



Chapter 27 – Why it is Difficult for Spirits to Remember Names and Dates

Mediums who have encountered spirits often are frustrated when they communicate with spirits, who seem to be the person they wish to speak with, but the spirit can't come up with an exact name or date of an episode that the medium wishes them to recall.

We expect exact memory, a photographic recollection from any spirit that comes within our sphere of communication. But, how would you feel, if you were asked to recount what you did on a certain day in kindergarten class? Could you remember your classmates, what you were wearing, what type of day it was, or anything?

While higher spirits are able to tap into memories and data from any slice of time in their lives; lower spirits have limited resources.

The [Rev. G. Vale Owen](#) quizzed the spirit Arnel as to why is it hard for discarnates to pin down exact times, dates, and names. Arnel answered G. Vale Owen:

“Now, as to earth names. These are remembered for a time after transition by death; but new names are given here, and are used in constant, to the exclusion of earth names. This has the effect of the earth name fading, becoming dim, and at last almost, or quite, vanishing from the memory. Not so much while relatives are still on earth, but after such time as they be all come over. Then, as generations go by, the line becomes intermixed with other blood, and the connection is thinned in ratio and at last is lost altogether. Exceptions there are; but few. Then, also, in the course of times names become changed, both in spelling and pronunciation. They become different names. But most of all they fade from memory as interest in the earth period becomes of less account by its removal from the more immediate proximity of the present estate of a progressed spirit, and among the infinite variety of experience here it is forgotten. It can always be had by research of the records, but that is rarely worthwhile.”

The ease of querying the database in the Universal Cloud varies by the level of the spirit. While on a lower sphere of heaven, a spirit may have to access his or her past by a separate device, or by a formal request for that particular memory, a higher spirit may possess the tools to retrieve information on demand, by merely thinking.

Imagine the ability to command all memories for a certain date, time, and place – plus the memories of the people with you or another person – to perfectly reconstruct events for a particular episode. This is the power of a high spirit and one that has been demonstrated to many people who have had near death experiences. Their life review wasn't painstakingly filmed and edited beforehand in anticipation of their journey to the other side. A high spirit (or group of mentors), after notification of a person coming temporarily to the spirit dimension, summoned up the replay on the spot. Although the group may have determined the episodes to review in advance of the soul coming for a short visit.

Next, Arnel answers the question about dates:

“The difficulty of remembering earth periods is a similar one and as needless to our present concerns as to our future course, in which chiefly our interest lies. There is also the fact that the continuous receding of our earth period and the intervention of event after event in so long a line of links, that it is difficult, on the moment, to pick out that particular link at the farther end and label it with earth time of day. It is easy for one of you to spring a query on one of us who is bent on giving you some message, and whose will is all taut and strenuous and focused on that message he wishes to give. It is not so easy for us, who have other work on hand, and who live in the present so much, to make a sudden about-ship and sail for the one little section in our wake where a particular wavelet lapped our bow, and which has long ago flattened out upon the bosom of the ocean, the while the ship still sped on her way, breasting swell after swell of the ocean. Count each swell a century, and you will get some idea of my meaning.” [\[121\]](#)

Two points stand out from Arnel's message. One, and the most important, is the absence of continually thinking back. While we on earth, look behind us to count the mistakes we made, the injustices we suffered, and the opportunities we lost ... a knowing spirit understands that the past

is unimportant – it is what they are learning now that is vital. A higher spirit stays in the moment to analyze their course of action to what has been presented to them. They don't waste their mental energy in regret. They only think back to review experiences for lessons learned.

The second point is the accumulation of life events over the course of hundreds, if not thousands of lives – must be immense. This is a fact of immortality. We retain our character, modifying it after each life on earth – hopefully for the better – but the endless string of interactions, great deeds and lesser deeds – eventually recede from our immediate memory bank.

The wonderful aspect of G. Vale Owen's communication with spirits in the early years of the Twentieth Century, isn't just the wise words that are spoken by spirits, but the meaning and glimpse of what life must be like in the spirit realm. Just the discussion of the ability to recall names and dates, presents us with a feeling of what immortality and the relative levels of spirits actually mean in practice.

The reward of working and studying hard to ascend in the spirit world becomes all the more apparent the more we learn.



Chapter 28 – In the Spirit Realm Appointments to

Positions of Responsibility Comes with More

Internal Power

The spirit world is organized. It has a governing and command process, just like we do on earth. The largest difference is that the people in charge are appointed for their piety, love, kindness, competence, and selflessness. But assignments of increased responsibility aren't just accomplished with an order – in the spirit realm, something else is given:

“Now when such appointment is made on earth authority is also given to the one appointed to exercise his office in the name of the State. But here there is added to the initiate a capacity of power to carry out the work of his own inherent ability. He is changed in personal capacity. The circumference of forces at his command is enlarged. In brief, he has become greater, not alone in executive authority but also in forcefulness of spirit.” [\[122\]](#)

The spirit Arnel slightly pulled back the cover of how the spirit world operates. He told the Rev. G. Vale Owen that men and women are not just appointed, but enhanced. Similar to what happens when a spirit ascends from one level to the next, where they are physically transformed, with less density, and more attributes; officials aren't assigned to their posts without added capabilities.

While they may be appointed assistants and other staff to enable them to carry out their duties, they are given something else besides. Their minds and bodies are supercharged, with greater reserves of energy, and most probably, heightened connectivity to other resources, which standby awaiting a call.

The Governor of Nosso Lar

In a book by the spirit Andre Luiz, psychographed by Francisco (Chico) C. Xavier, there is a prime example of a spirit realm government official who seems to have an expanded ability of service and work. The Governor

of the spirit colony *Nosso Lar*, meaning “Our Home”, in Portuguese, for it was above the earthly city Rio de Janeiro, in which it received the spirits of the Brazilians of those who left their bodies within that vicinity, was described in a book, also called *Nosso Lar*. A friend of Andre’s took him on a tour of the city and pointed out where the Governor lived:

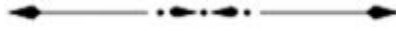
“Our devoted Governor lives there and a staff of three thousand employees assist him in his administrative duties. However, he is the most faithful and untiring worker of all. The Ministers ordinarily travel to other spheres in order to renew their energies and acquire new knowledge, and we too have our habitual sideline activities, but the Governor has no leisure time on his hands. While he insists that we must rest, that we must take periodic vacations, he himself almost never rests, sacrificing even his sleeping hours. It seems like it’s his glory to render round-the-clock service. I’ve been here for forty years, and except for the collective prayer services, I have rarely seen him at any public function. His thought, however, reaches every circle of service, and his kind assistance involves everybody and everything.” [\[123\]](#)

Nosso Lar was published in 1944, the communication from the spirit Arnel was in 1919, twenty-five years after we were told that high officials are granted extraordinary powers and endurance. The information derived from Spiritist mediums via advanced souls from the other side is consistent and complimentary.

Spiritism, since its beginnings in the 1850s, as codified by Allan Kardec, has continually added to our pool of knowledge. Each message and book published serves to clarify what is waiting for us when we return home.

The spirit world is our true home; we were created there, we were launched into numerous lives from there, and in the future we shall remain for the vast majority of our immortal lives there. Each bright spark of information which lands at our feet, serves to enlighten us and to make known to all of humanity what is to come for them after physical death.

Abolishing the fear of death, is a pronounced liberation, for it should remove our preoccupation from attaining the temporary luxuries on earth and focus our attention on learning our lessons assigned to us, so that we may ascend in the heavenly spheres.



Chapter 29 – When We Leave This Life We Eventually Become Part of the Whole – Yet

Distinct

A group of spirits, from the tenth level of heaven, told us an important fact concerning our ultimate destiny:

“There are reaches there far surpassing any imagining of ours, or of your own, and these will be made clear to us as we in the ages which are ahead put on state after state of more perfection. So far as we are able to project our minds into that far immensity of life and being we cannot see any end to our onward going, for, as a river viewed from the mountain in which it takes its beginning, so is the life eternal.” [\[124\]](#)

Kathleen, the communicator from of a group of spirits, sent to converse with Rev. G. Vale Owen, presented the topic of our ascension into the unknown levels of heaven. The group of spirits are from the tenth level, which is considered a very high sphere, where life and buildings can be constructed by the power of thought from these advanced spirits. Even they, who are so wise and beyond us, marvel at the road ahead. A highway which appears to reach into infinity.

Our life is one of eternal learning. One of our vital characteristics we should emphasize is our enjoyment of discovery. For this attribute will propel us into realms and kingdoms which are beyond any of our fantasies. Humans have always been explorers, whether a new continent, the headwaters of a river, or an asteroid or planet. Our inner desire to travel where we have not yet gone is part of our make-up. Without it we wouldn't be considered material to have graduated into spirits with free-will.

G. Vale Owen and other Spiritist mediums have sent us information from the spirit world – focused on the spheres around, on, and under our physical planet. But this particular message exposes the immensity of the spirit universe(s) which lay beyond. They expand further on what lies ahead:

“The stream broadens, and into its volume absorbs more and more those other streams which come from lands diverse in character, as in soil. So is the life of a man, as he, too, gathers into his personality many side-currents of diverse quality, and in himself blending them in unity makes these one in and with himself. As the river is seen still to broaden until it passes out of itself and ceases to be distinctive as a separate entity, so man, as he himself broadens out beyond his initial state, passes into that great ocean of light where we cannot follow him in his further progress from our viewpoint on the mountain of his birth. But this we have learned, and few there are who doubt it, that as the water of the ocean does not change the substance of the river from the water into that which is other than water, but only enriches and modifies its quality, so man will still be man when he emerges from between the banks of individuality on the one hand, and of personality on the other, and blends the richness of his accumulated qualities with the infinitude of That which is the beginning and the consummation, the outgoing and the incoming forces of the whole cycles of Being.”

[\[125\]](#)

There is so much in the paragraph above. First, we are a fluid creature. We are not a spirit hatched to a particular form. We are a possibility. We are a scaffold upon which to hang and place tools, capabilities, assets, attributes, and connections. After each graduation from one level to the next, more is added, more is altered ... but above all – we are still ourselves. Our personality is intact. We are still individuals.

Second, while we retain our temperament and disposition, we become more ... we plug into the wider spirit environment. We contribute to the whole – while simultaneously maintaining our unique contribution. Thereby, increasing the power and scope of all.

Many people, religions, and others have ideas of what occurs after our death. They range from life in a constant paradise to complete absorption into a Supreme Intelligence. All may be partially true, since we travel up a path in which we experience many transitions. Transformations which may make us unrecognizable, if we saw ourselves a billion years hence.

The spirits hint at our future, when they tell G. Vale Owen:

“Also, in the river fishes and water-animals have their habitation, but wider and deeper realms of oceans make room for things of life of grander bulk and power than these, so those who in unity disport their immensity in person and in power must be of magnitude of glory beyond our ken.” [\[126\]](#)

Who can know for certain what is meant by “magnitude of glory beyond our ken”, except that as we rise we become more awesome in our majesty, our love, and our wisdom. This is a future worth fighting and sacrificing for here on earth – a place that is but a small step toward the light.

Lastly, the spirits tell G. Vale Owen, that those so far above us, are not unaware of our travails. Their love constantly bathes us, giving us incentives to stay on an upward path:

“We, therefore, glance ahead toward those far brothers of our own and know that they are not unmindful of us who, if we be much removed from their abode, yet have our faces set toward their quarters. It is from the Ultimate through such as these that life comes forth and bathes in love these lesser worlds of us and you. It is enough. We take our sip of the chalice of our destiny, and go forward much refreshed and strengthened for what duty lies to hand.” [\[127\]](#)



Chapter 30 – We are Dynamic Spirits

Spirit attributes are not fixed. Spirits are not born with a certain set of intelligence, coordination, appearance, or personality. There is no set of DNA mandating the limitations of a spirit. Instead, spirits start out as primitive beings – artificial logical constructs, created (who knows how!) and allowed to accumulate capabilities and form their character through experiences, dedication, and guidance by superior spirits. The ultimate set of intelligence, wisdom, spirituality, energy, and will power is entirely up to each individual soul.

The environment of heaven is dynamic and ever changing in response to intellectual power. Hence, a normal static creature could not survive long in a realm where buildings and trees respond to faith and emotion. Where the sky could be different colors and where everything seemly pulsates with life and reacts immediately to stimuli. A human, who was transported to heaven, with their handicaps intact, would be partially blind, unable to move at any speed comparable to the creatures around him or her, and could only communicate with others very slowly and in rudimentary sentences.

Hence, the knowledge imparted to us by our benefactors in the spirit realm is meant to prepare us for life after physical death. It is meant to convey that our quest for new horizons, new challenges, and new experiences will never be exhausted. And that each new journey will bring with it a full kit. Everything we require to survive and succeed will be part of us.

The most important ingredient we bring is our intellectual curiosity and determination. Therefore, whatever body you may now possess, whatever age you are, whatever restrictions are now part of your life, they are all temporary. They will all disappear the moment you cast off your dense covering and are free in the spirit world.

You will regenerate your body to appear as you believe it should appear. You will clothe yourself in what you desire. You will travel at the speed of thought. You will see beyond the horizon. You will be connected with an infinite universe. And you will always be at the start of another journey, another challenge.

While in the earth life, you should prepare yourself mentally now.



Section 4 – Power of Spirits

The power of a spirit depends upon the level of heaven they have achieved. As a spirit ascends they become less dense ... more energy and less matter. Energy implies more force and more capabilities.

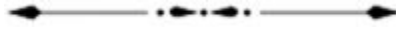
Spirits live in a different dimension than we do. There are a different set of natural laws. As an example, the speed of light is the limit of velocity in our universe – the speed of thought is the rule in the spirit realm. To travel one thinks of the destination; the distance is covered almost instantaneously.

When the great late Brazilian medium, Francisco (Chico) C. Xavier, was in a hospital room, near the end of his long life, there was a camera crew outside the hospital. They had their camera trained on Chico's window. After Chico was able to leave the hospital, he told people that he was visited by spirits while recovering. The camera crew went back and examined the footage. They noticed a streak of light descending from the sky right into the hospital room window. The flash took less than a second. Was it the reflection of high spirits on their way to see Chico? One can't tell, but they only saw the flash once on film and it occurred around the time when Chico said spirits came to see him.

The spirit universe came before our physical universe. Other dimensions and universes exist. How many and how they are layered and interact is still a mystery. I suspect that as a spirit ascends into the creative hierarchy their span of travel and control extends over multiple dimensions and touches universes teeming with life.

God has created a system of promoting spirits to ever increasing responsibilities and power. Thus our universe is most probably not expansive enough to warrant the continual stream of newly qualified workers. Hence new universes and additional dimensions are being created. Continuously expanding, forever evolving ... opening new opportunities for world building, terraforming, and guiding the evolution of a variety of species.

You are being groomed for a great future. Your power will, at some time in the future, be almost omnipotent. Hence, your current training is not trivial and is meant to exercise your character to the limits.



Chapter 31 – Conjuring in the 1st Level of Heaven

When you are released from your outer casing and free from its dense shield, you are once again a spirit. You are now thinking with your spirit brain, instead of a poor receptor of images, thoughts, and memories. You are now in a universe where mere thought translates into action.

If you are lucky enough (actually, if you have worked hard and cast off your materialism and selfishness) to ascend to one of the first levels of heaven, you shall find out that you have powers that you only dreamed of when you were a child.

An example of the ability to create something from thin air is in the Reverend Owen's book, which is a collection of four of his books, *Life Beyond the Veil*, in *The Lowlands of Heaven* section, where his mother talks about herself and members of her learning group experimenting with using their brains to create.

The group retreated to an open space. They decided to try to make a statue of a cousin of an elephant, a type that is no longer on earth. Next, she tells us what occurred:

“We all sat around the open space and concentrated our wills on the object to be produced. Very quickly it appeared and stood there before us. We were much surprised at the quickness of the result. But, from our point of view, there were two defects. It was much too large; for we had failed to regulate the combination of our wills in due proportion. And it was much more like a live animal than a statue, for many had thought in their minds of the live animal itself, and also of its coloring, and so the results was a mixture between stone and flesh. Also many points were disproportionate – the head too large and the body too small, and so on, showing that more power had been concentrated on some parts than on others. It is thus we learn our imperfections, and how to remedy them, in all our studies. We experiment, and then examine the result, and try again. We did so now.” [\[128\]](#)

Did you hate to work in groups during your school years? One person never did any work, another was just annoying. Graduating to the real world, we learned that we almost always had to work in groups and that the same cast of characters were with us. Working in complete harmony was a rare, but an extremely satisfying experience.

In the spirit world this is a necessity. Only high powerful spirits are able to create entirely on their own. All must have the same dedication and willingness to work together for the same goal. The thirst for showing off and receiving the best rewards would, most certainly, hinder the success of the group. This is why selfishness must be abandoned before one is allowed to ascend to heaven.

The group determines to give it another attempt. They select a different object for their next try:

“Taking our minds off the statue so produced, and talking together, it gradually faded away. And then we were fresh and ready for our next trial, We decided not to select the same model as before, or our minds would probably run into more or less the same grooves. So we, this time, chose a tree with fruit on it – something like an orange tree, but not quite the same.

We were more successful this time. The chief points of failure were that some of the fruit was ripe and some unripe. And the leaves were not correct in color, nor the branches rightly proportioned. And so we tried one thing after another, and found ourselves a little more successful each time. You can imagine somewhat the joy of such schooling as this, and the laughter and happy humor which result from our mistakes. Those among you who think that in this life we never make jokes and never even laugh, will have to revise their ideas some day or they will find us strange company – or perhaps we shall find them so. But they soon learn what the love of this land is, where we can be perfectly natural and unrestrained, and indeed are compelled to be so if we wish to be accepted into respectable company, as you would phrase it. I fear the obverse is rather true on earth, it is not? Ah well, live and learn, and those who live in this life – not merely exist, or worse – learn very quickly. And the more we learn, the more we marvel at the forces at our command.” [\[129\]](#)

Imagine having to think of every detail, every stem and small branch of a tree or a bush. A hard task indeed. There is an example of spirits in the first level of heaven performing a similar feat, in a different celestial city, Nossos Lar. In the book, psychographed by Francisco (Chico) C. Xavier, the spirit Andre Luiz is part of a large group that is preparing a chamber to accept a very high spirit. The high spirit evidently has not materialized in a lower plane for quite a while, therefore the assembly was tasked to supply the required conditions for the high spirit, so he could come to their location and give a lecture.

The audience was instructed to fill the chamber with an artificial environment, with still waters, a robust tree, with vegetation and leaves on the tree. Andre Luiz describes the beautiful scene in the chamber. Then the Instructor addresses the group sternly;

“My friends, your task has not been fully completed. Pay close attention to the uncompleted details and give a more effective outward expression to your inner power! You still have fifteen minutes to finish your work.” [\[130\]](#)

For us here on this hard rocky planet, where we are seemingly incapable of focusing our attention for a few minutes at a time, life in heaven is another type of challenge. Our brawn isn't as important as our brain, our strength is centered in our will. And our will is only as effective as our ability to concentrate. We must marshal our resources, and be free of the distractions of earth. Hate, envy, desire for position above others, lust for new material objects, all are baggage that must be discarded before we can walk through the gates of heaven.

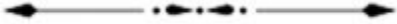
We are told all of this in the Bible:

[13](#) "Enter through the narrow gate; for the gate is wide and the way is broad that leads to destruction, and there are many who enter through it.

[14](#) "For the gate is small and the way is narrow that leads to life, and there are few who find it. (Mathew 13:14)

The spirit world started notifying us of the conditions to enter paradise more than two thousand years ago. And they are providing more specific information and examples to us in our current epoch. Truthfully, this is a

tough path to follow. I have failed more than I have succeeded. It's an uphill battle, but it only needs a small forward movement every day.



Chapter 32 – The Power of a Name in the Spirit

World

Those who have studied Ancient Egypt, the beliefs of the Israelites, and knowledgeable about the occult in many cultures understand that a name has power. To invoke a name, alerts the spirit that they are being called.

According to some accounts, the calling of a name gives a person certain advantages over the spirit. E. A. Wallis Budge in his book *Egyptian Magic* (Dover Publications Inc.) tells us the following about the power of the names to the Egyptian:

"The Egyptians, like most Oriental nations, attached very great importance to the knowledge of names, and the knowledge of how to use and to make mention of names which possessed magical powers was a necessity both for the living and the dead. It was believed that if a man knew the name of a god or a devil, and addressed him by it, he was bound to answer him and to do whatever he wished; and the possession of the knowledge of the name of a man enabled his neighbor to do him good or evil." [\[131\]](#)

The Reverend G. Vale Owen, *The Lowlands of Heaven* section, which is in a compilation of four of his books, *Life Beyond the Veil*, communicates with his mother, who resides in the spirit world. In his séances with his mother, he encounters problems and seemingly hesitation in getting the names of spirits with whom his mother converses.

He asks his mother the question, "Why is it so difficult for you to give names?" She reveals some details, yet there is much still hidden in her explanation:

"There is also difficulty in explaining the difficulty – from your point of view so apparently simple a matter. Let us put it in this way. You know that with the old Egyptians the name of a god or goddess was much more than a name as understood by the hardy materialistic Anglo-Saxon from whose race came the questions: 'What's in a name?' Well, from our point of view, and that also of the ancient wisdom of Egypt, based on data from this side of the Veil, there is a great deal in a

name. Even in the mere repetition of some names there is actual power, and sometimes peril. That we know now as we did not when on earth. And so we here acquire a reverence for the entity ‘the Name’, which to you would probably seem foolish. Nevertheless, it is partly for this reason that names do not come through to you so plentifully as many rather feeble investigators would wish.” [\[132\]](#)

We are told, “The mere repetition of some names there is actual power, and sometimes peril.” I have read hints of this in different Spiritist literature, such as the example when a person talks about a recently deceased friend at his funeral. The man comments that his friend witnessed a murder. At the very mention of the murderer’s name, the low spirit appeared wanting to know who accused him of murder.

In the book, *Liberation*, psychographed by Francisco (Chico) C. Xavier, inspired by the spirit Andre Luiz, spirit workers are cautioned to not speak the names of certain low dangerous spirits, lest they quickly come to thwart the plans of benevolent spirits to help a soul in distress.

Vale Owen’s mother attempt to fully describe the complexity of the situation:

“Also the mere utterance and transmission of some of these names is, when we are in this earth region, a matter of more difficulty than you would perhaps deem. It is a subject, however, which is hard to explain to you, and only one which you will be able to understand when you have become more familiar with the fourth dimension which obtains here – which term, also, we use for want of a better. We will just refer you to two or three instances and there leave the matter.

One is the giving to Moses of the Name of the great Officer of the Supreme Who visited him. Moses asked for that Name and got it – and neither he nor anyone else to this day has been able to say what it means.

Then the lesser Angel who came to Jacob. Jacob asked for his name, and it was refused him. The Angels who came to Abraham and to others in the Old Testament very seldom gave their names. Likewise in the New Testament, most of the Angels, who come to minister earth’s denizens are simply so called; and where the name is given, as in the

case of Gabriel, it is little understood as to its inner significance. Of the new name which no man – that is, man on earth – knoweth.” [\[133\]](#)

This rings true with what I have read before and I believe that in the vast majority of Spiritist books, we are given the names of spirits that may mean something to us, but isn't the official name of the spirit being written about. For instance, Socrates, who, it has been reported, is a minister for Christ, is mentioned by his past name. A name bequeathed to him when he came to Athens, Greece, four hundred years before Jesus' arrival on earth. The name Socrates is mentioned in the books by Allan Kardec and we have been told that Socrates was a lead in editing the books by the spirit Andre Luiz. Socrates is the name we know because of his historical context, his actual spirit name may be altogether different.

Lastly, G. Vale Owen asks his mother one last question on the subject:

“ What is your name mother – I mean your new name? Is it permissible for you to give it?

Permissible, yes, but not wise, dear. You know I would give it if it were so. But this for the present I must withhold even from you, knowing that you will understand my love even if my motive is not very clear.”

[\[134\]](#)

At the end, Vale Owen's own mother determines it is best not to reveal her spirit name. Hence, exactly what powers the knowledge of an exclusive name of the spirit entails, I am not sure. Given the knowledge that our thoughts contain our unique identification, which may have our spirit name encoded within it, and that our feelings radiate out from us to the universe, I do believe that a spirit who goes by a name we call, will at the least, be aware of our inquiry.



Chapter 33 – Faith – Not Just for Moving Mountains but to Create Them

The Rev G. Vale Owen wrote a series of four books in the early 1900's. Unbeknownst to many at the time, he added to the revelations about Spiritism, which commenced in the 1850's by Allan Kardec. In the compilation of four books, *The Life Beyond the Veil*, more of the fantastic world that we shall, as spirits, return to was presented to us. One of the most startling aspects of the book is the role of faith. Not faith as we know it, but faith as a real power, the ability to conjure. Far beyond any of our earthly fantasies.

What was Presented by Spiritism

Spiritism burst upon the world in the 1850's. In a series of questions posed to spirits by Allan Kardec, answers that came from multiple mediums throughout Europe, for Allan Kardec wouldn't use just one response, but insured the communications were verified by multiple sources, he codified the Doctrine of Spiritism.

Spiritism is the promised Third Revelation by Christ in the New Testament. We are told that we must pass through multiple lives in a quest to become more loving, charitable, fraternal, and honest souls. That we live in a world which is tailored as a campus for us to learn the qualities that we are required to attain before we are allowed to ascend in the spiritual hierarchy

In essence, we should follow the Golden Rule, do unto others as you would do unto them, in all things. The outward trappings of churches, rituals, rote prayers, dietary restrictions were all superfluous, all that is necessary is goodness of heart.

Needless to say, this provoked an immense backlash from organized religion. The Catholic Church organized book burnings of Allan Kardec's, *The Spirits Book*.

Since that time there has been more information presented to us, most spectacularly via the mediumship of Francisco (Chico) C. Xavier, who

psychographed more than 450 books, all dictated to him by spirits. Angels and other high spirits all with a mission to inform humans on our planet the correct modes of behavior.

Within all of the Spiritist literature I have read to date, I have never seen one mention of any bigoted ideas. We are told that spirits may incarnate as men or women, in different races, in different cultures, therefore we should be kind and understanding to all. That marriage is between two spirits, not just a male and female. The length of time they are together is up to them and them alone.

Despite the resistance by organized religion, the Supreme Intelligence pushed on and continued to send to us information about our future life as spirits. So that we may learn what is coming and why we are here in our frail physical bodies.

We seem so weak and vulnerable, any adverse chain of events could wipe us off the planet at any time. But we must realize that our perceived weakness is part of the plan to prepare us. Actually, we are immortal souls, unable to die. Only our temporary body has the composition to degrade. Our spirit is indestructible.

We are here on this terra firma campus to mold our minds to be as perfect as our spirit bodies. We are deliberately placed on a sphere with a thousand distractions so that we may educate our minds to ignore and filter out destructive thoughts so that we eventually acquire the ability to focus our concentration in any situation.

Our first step is to find our way toward faith. With faith we keep our attention on a bigger theme, a target superior to our daily worries and anxieties. Faith allows us to build a shield against destructive feelings. Conviction in a higher purpose acts as a ruby does to concentrate light from one of the first lasers.

Faith

What is faith? Jesus tells us:

“Truly I tell you, if you have faith as small as a mustard seed, you can say to this mountain, 'Move from here to there,' and it will move. Nothing will be impossible for you” Matthew 17:20

Haven't we all tried to move objects with our minds. A pencil or a feather, maybe we cheat and blow air to move it. Invariably our experiments result in abject failure. We find out we can't move anything with our minds. So what the heck was Jesus talking about?

Jesus was foreshadowing our future. Not on earth but as a spirit. Not a low spirit, but a high, educated, pure spirit.

Power of the Spirit World

I first encountered the immense capabilities of the Spirituality when I read the book, *On the Way to the Light*, psychographed by Francisco C. Xavier, dictated to him by his spirit mentor Emmanuel. The book is a survey of how the spirit realm has guided our planet from its formation.

In the book, Emmanuel tells us that a Community of Pure Spirits govern our part of the Universe. We are told that high spirits, of which Christ was a participant, created our solar system, and placed the planets in orbit. Emmanuel also recounted how our moon was created:

“In that computation of cosmic values, in which workers from the spirit plane labored under the merciful guidance of the Christ, the formation of earth's satellite was ordered.

The innermost details of the work plan to be carried out on the earth would require the help of the moon. The moon would be the anchor for the earth's equilibrium as it orbited around the seat of the system, and it would be the fountainhead of regulating forces for the planet's stability. Most of all, the newborn orb would need the moon's polarized light, whose gentle magnetism would play a decisive role in the ongoing drama of the creation and reproduction of all species in the various kingdoms of nature.” [\[135\]](#)

At first glance the passage seem to mean that extremely high level spirits actually assisted in the building of the moon and somehow they pushed the moon into the correct orbit around the earth. Exactly how this marvel of engineering was accomplished, I had no idea.

Subsequently, as I read more books which revealed the capabilities of high spirits I began to see how the mind of a spirit coupled with the twin attributes of faith and knowledge could achieve, what we on earth, would

consider to be miracles. Spiritism explains to us there are no such thing as miracles, only phenomena which we can't explain, but are self-evident to the wiser spirits.

Teleportation

One example of the possibility of the manipulation of matter comes from a passage I read in the book, *In the Realms of Mediumship*, psychographed by Francisco (Chico) C. Xavier, there is a discussion of transporting matter created in the physical plane via spirits. During a mediums meeting, spirits in attendance took flowers made from ectoplasmic material and carried them through walls in our plane.

Andre Luiz asks how this could be possible, he is informed, by what I think is a very revealing answer:

"There are technicians here who are skilled enough to dematerialize the physical elements and reconstruct them straight away, conscious of the responsibility they're undertaking." [\[136\]](#)

Hence, advanced spirits are able to take objects native to our sphere, the physical world, and dematerialize them enough to pass through what we would consider to be a solid formation. Then almost instantly reform the object.

Next, as a peek of the scientific advances that will come, Andre Luiz is told:

"In any construction of the physical realm, the clusters of atoms are not solid fortresses, just as is the case in our own sphere of action. There is empty space in all formations and through it the elements interpenetrate. The day will come when earthly science will be able to reintegrate the units and constitutions of atoms with the same assurance with which they are learning to disintegrate them." [\[137\]](#)

Hence, a spirit via the powers of their mind, along with an understanding of the Divine Laws, is able to deconstruct a solid object and remake it at their will. A process that in some future date, we shall be able to reproduce with complex instruments, while learned spirits can accomplish the same feat with their will.

Creation

More was revealed about the art of creation when I started reading the Reverend G. Vale Owen's book, *The Life Beyond the Veil*. In *Book Two – The Highlands of Heaven*, about a spirit who resides in the tenth level of heaven, named Zabdiel. The tenth level implies the sequence of stages above the earth. Each planet has their own circles of hierarchy which span outward from each distinctive sphere.

Zabdiel, who is a high spirit, has the power to control the basic building blocks of the Universe (known in Spiritism as Universal Fluid) and create, not just an object, but life. Life out of nothing, fully formed and functioning. Only in our fantasy literature would such a scene occur.

It was then I understood that as a spirit progresses their ability to guide the Divine Forces increases, until they possess, in our estimation, to be God-like powers. Power to not only move mountains, but to construct entire ranges by focusing their will.

Zabdiel explains faith as it is defined in the Other World:

“According to your faith be it unto you.” This stands a promise of power today as when first He said it; and it may be claimed with full assurance of fulfillment. Only that faith must be present, and then the present enablement will be manifest, in ways diverse but with no uncertainty of cause and effect.

Now, this is not alone to you, but to us here in these spheres progress and progressive. It is the acquiring of faith in exercise that we study to compass and, that gotten, we are powerful to help others, and ourselves to enjoy. For it is delight and pleasure to give, more than to receive, as He said.” [\[138\]](#)

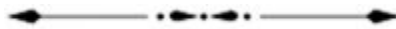
Faith is the keystone, but it must be surrounded by all of the attributes of the Golden Rule; Love, Charity, Fraternity, Forgiveness, and Honesty. Without the supporting foundation, faith is not sufficient to unlock the potential within each of us to materialize our desires, since our intentions must be pure and void of any selfishness before we are granted such command.

Zabdiel tells us the difference between faith in our plane and faith in the spirit dimension;

“But do not mistake the nature of faith in the using of it. In the earth life it is of indefinite quality as mostly understood – something between trustfulness and a right understanding of what is truth. But here, where we study all things as to their essence, we know faith is more than this. It is power capable of scientific analysis, in a measure in correspondence with the progress made by any man.” [\[139\]](#)

The circle is complete when we learn to practice total control over our emotions, while in the physical world, and apply our loving will in a professional manner in the spirit realm. Only then, after a multitudes of lives, painfully mastering our character and attitudes, can we graduate to a position of responsibility to be entrusted with such might.

When we were children we would dream of having overwhelming power to perform great events. Those dreams of conjuring something out of nothing are visions of a distant future. We should not let go of our childhood aspirations, we ought to mold them into a strength of purpose to fashion our deepest intentions into energy for good.



Chapter 34 – Angels on Earth

When reading about the visits of angels on earth recorded in the Old Testament, and then the story of the New Testament and the phenomena which occurred during the time of Jesus, one could think that the thousands of years spanning from Abraham to Jesus was the peak of angels coming to earth. The Rev. G. Vale Owen, who communicated with high spirits in the early 1900s, was involved with a high spirit named Zabdiel, who broached the subject of angels on earth.

He first spoke of angels living in higher spheres, in the upper levels of heaven. Where spirits are less dense than spirits below them and considerably of a different composition than we on earth. While in our physical form we are mostly matter and some energy, this ratio lessens and then reverses in the higher levels.

Pure spirits, according to [Allan Kardec](#), are:

“ 112. *General Characteristics* . The influence of matter null; a superiority, both intellectual and moral, so absolute as to constitute what, in comparison with the spirits of all other orders may be termed perfection.” [\[140\]](#)

Allan Kardec called them “First Order – Pure Spirits”, others call them pure spirits or angels. Pure spirits no longer have the need to incarnate, they have no blemishes to remove in a [world of atonement](#) . Although free of paying off past debts and gaining new experiences, they are not idle. “They are the messengers and ministers of God” [\[141\]](#), according to Allan Kardec.

These pure spirits are sent on important missions to earth (or to other planets), rarely in physical form, but in spirit form. Zabdiel tells us that an angel coming to earth is like a deep-sea diver, submersing thousands of fathoms to attempt to talk to the life forms residing in a hostile environment. A pure spirit requires a support group to assist them in their mission, just like a diver who requires a group on the surface to monitor all vital signs. Next, Zabdiel, tells us about how and why angels come to earth:

“Some there are who ask why angels do not come in plenty nowadays as in the olden times. Here are many errors in few words, and two pre-eminent. For first, angels of high estate did never come in plenty to the

earth plane, but one here and another there amid the ages; and those were accounted worthy of a forward place in the annals of great events. Angels do not in this wise come to earth and visibly appear, except it be on some very rare and special commission. This were an extension of our difficult task: first must the diver get to the dark and very deep waters, and then must he so condition himself that he become visible to those nearly blind creatures on the ocean floor.” [\[142\]](#)

What Zabdiel cites as a difficult task is mirrored in an example in the book *Workers of the Life Eternal*, there is a chapter detailing the events when a guest speaker from a high order world, gave a lecture to spirits in Nossos Lar. Ordinarily, this is not a mystery, the speaker arrives and speaks, but this instance was different.

A High Spirit Communicates with Spirits on a Lower Level of Heaven

In the book, *Workers of the Life Eternal*, psychographed by Francisco C. Xavier, there is a strange encounter in Chapter 3 – The Sublime Visitor. The strangeness does not lie in the topic, the speech, or the people involved. It lies in the limited communication between the high order spirit and those listening at Nossos Lar. The city Nossos Lar (which means Our Home in English), is located in one of the lower levels of heaven.

The spirit Andre Luiz, who worked with Francisco C. Xavier, in a series of books detailing his life in the heavenly city Nossos Lar and how he took part in teams assisting us on earth, opens his tale of the speech by a visiting spirit by describing a modest well-lit room that had on one side a small chamber made of a substance similar to clear, transparent glass. Andre is told why a chamber is required:

“In meeting with us, the Father’s messengers exercise sacrifice and self-denial; they endure the vibratory shocks of our lower planes; they retake the form they abandoned long ago; they humble themselves to be like us.” [\[143\]](#)

Andre is told the same story as Zabdiel tells the Rev. G Vale Owen, higher order spirits are fundamentally different, hence descending to lower

levels of spirituality takes time and effort. Andre is given an explanation of why such a journey is challenging:

“It is vital to abide by a steadfast attitude of serenity and respect. Such an environment provides the foundation for the emission of pure energies, and for that reason we will hold all fellow spirits present responsible for any unharmonious minutia in the work to be accomplished.” [\[144\]](#)

This all fits to what we have been told before, by Allan Kardec, Francisco (Chico) C. Xavier, and by G. Vale Owen, the higher the spirit the more pure energy with either very small or no traces of matter and the spirit is more tuned to God’s love.

As spirits ascend they undergo a metamorphosis, not only does their character become pure, but their body increases in brightness (due to the reflection of love) and force. High order spirits have great power to affect change with thought alone.

The audience was then instructed to fill the chamber with an artificial environment, with still waters, a robust tree, with vegetation and leaves on the tree.

The Speaker

The speaker’s name is Asclepios. He appeared wearing a lily-white cloak. He had an old-man’s face and a halo of light. Andre further describes Asclepios’ appearance:

“We could see only the upper portion of his body, giving me the impression that the lower part was naturally hidden in the abundant vegetation. His arms and hands, though, were revealed in all their anatomically minute detail because with his right hand he blessed us with a wide gesture while holding in his other hand a small roll of radiant parchments, allowing us to see a golden cord tied to his waist.” [\[145\]](#)

After the speech Andre wished to know more about Asclepios, he was told the following;

“Asclepios belongs to the redeemed communities of the Plane of the Immortals in the highest regions of earth’s spiritual realm. He lives far above our notions of form, and in conditions that are inconceivable to our current concept of life. He has already lost all direct contact with the earth per se, and could only make himself felt there through messengers and missionaries of great power. His sacrifice in coming to visit us is to be appreciated, despite our improved position in relation to incarnate humans. He rarely comes here. However, at times, other mentors of the same category visit us out of fraternal mercy.” [\[146\]](#)

Andre then finds out that a spirit like Asclepios will only reincarnate on earth every five to eight centuries. Then Andre asks if Asclepios is the highest spiritual form to be found in the universe; he receives the following answer:

“Not at all. Asclepios is associated with other self-denying mentors of terrestrial humankind; he is part of the highest echelon of the community to which he belongs, but in reality he is still a spirit of our planet, although working in the highest realms of life. We must travel for a long time in the evolutionary arena before we can follow in his footsteps. However, we believe that our sublime visitor longs to be part of the board of representatives of our orb in the glorious communities that inhabit Jupiter and Saturn, for example. In turn, the members of those orbs anxiously await the moment in which they will be summoned to the divine assemblies that govern our entire solar system. Among these latter are those who carefully and watchfully await the minute in which they will be called to work with those who maintain the constellation Hercules, to whose family we belong. Those who guide our group of stars naturally aspire one day to make up the crown of celestial spirits who support life and guide it in the galactic system through which we move. And did you know, my friend, that our Milky Way, a breeding ground and fount of millions of worlds, is just one single detail of the Divine Creation, a mere corner of the universe?!...”

[\[147\]](#)

Asclepios has a high position in our Solar System, but there are plenty of positions above him in command of our universe. Zabdiel’s metaphor of the diver is clear when paired with the information given about the high spirit Asclepios.

Asclepios is at least a very high order spirit, if not a pure spirit. He exists in a plane and dimension that we can't comprehend. He may be one of the angels that Zabdiel talks about when he says angels only come periodically in physical form to our planet.

The Speech

The speech that Asclepios gave is not known to us, Andre Luiz declined to record it. Andre thus describes what he heard and why he would not translate it;

“In a clear, attractive voice, the emissary wished us the peace of Christ, and then spoke to us in a tone that could not be defined in human language (heeding the imperatives of my conscience, I will refrain from rendering any incomplete and imperfect translation).” [\[148\]](#)

Andre Luiz did enlighten us about the questions and answers after the speech. When one of the spectators raised a question, Asclepios brought out one of the parchments that contained a Bible verse to answer the question. When the questioner pressed for more, Asclepios would only enlarge on the verse that he had displayed. There was no real interaction with the assembly.

Here is one example:

“Sister Luciana, however, who was part of our small group, spoke up and asked;

‘Enlightened mentor, this is the first time that I am going down to earth on a clearly defined spiritual aid mission. Could you perchance provide me with the guidance I need?’

The emissary, who seemed to have brought biblical answers that he had prepared beforehand, unfolded another sheet and, surprised, we read 1 Thessalonians 4:9 by the Apostle to the Gentiles:

‘But as for fraternal charity. I have no need to write to you, since you have been taught by God that you are to love one another.’

Somewhat confused, Luciana respectfully remarked: ‘I see, I see...’

‘Practically applied,’ the messenger politely commented, ‘the Word teaches us to improvise resources of the good in the most difficult of

situations.”” [\[149\]](#)

The answers sounded pre-recorded, only marginally associated with the questions given. My impression, my theory, is that Asclepios could not interact with the crowd, because he exists in such a higher level, that direct communication would be difficult. He could probably see the span of states in the lower level of heaven (meaning a wider view of past, present, and future – in our terms). One that allowed him to “know” the questions beforehand, but not to interact on a spontaneous level.

The higher a spirit, the more apt they are to discern the fourth dimension. They are able to see beforehand and after any event on a broader scale than those on the pecking order below them. Whereas, we on the physical plane live life in three dimensions, length, height, and width, with time continually marching on, the higher the spirit the more they are able to “see” not only three dimensions, but the fourth also.

We can’t see into the future, spirits above us can see a little ways into the future, and so on. The higher the spirit the wider the range of seeing an object over a span of time.

Angels Work for Humankind

Given the obstacles for direct assistance from angels, Zabdiel hints at other methods in which we are guided:

“No; we work for men, and are present with them, but in other ways than this, according to rule and varying method as each task requires. And that is the second error made; for we are present and do come to earth continually. But in that word ‘come’ more lies hidden than I may reveal. For even those on this side, in the spheres between us and you, do not understand yet our powers and the ways of their using, but only in part as they learn in the course of their progress. And so let it rest thus.” [\[150\]](#)

Angels continually come to earth. We may not see or feel their presence, but they are here and they always arrive for a purpose. Always for an honorable cause. The help may seem strange at times, to us in our short lives, but the end game is a constant. Angels help us individually and collectively to advance toward a goal of self-improvement. Not in material

wealth but in spiritual wealth, the only kind that doesn't disappear with time.



Chapter 35 – Transmission of Spiritual Power

Spirits create by thought. God created the spirit and physical universes by thought. High spirits carried on the work of God, by forming solar systems, planets, and life on earth. How does thought transform into concrete action? How does an idea guide a planet or change the destiny of a single human?

Zabdiel presents how the spark of an idea affects matter in a chapter titled, *The Science of Heaven*. Zabdiel is the spirit who sent a stream of communications to the Rev. G. Vale Owen from November 3, 1913 to January 8, 1914. All were published in a book, which was first serialized in the English papers in the 1920's. Ultimately a book was published, *The Life Beyond the Veil*; which was a compilation of four previously published books. The messages from Zabdiel are found in book two, titled *The Highlands of Heaven*.

Energy = Universal Fluid

First Zabdiel defines what he means by the use of the word “energy”:

“Energy, as I now employ the word, is to be understood as that intermediary which couples up the motion of will with the effect as displayed in the minds of men. We here are trained to this end that we may, by the motion of our wills, transmit, by what we may call vibration, our thoughts through the intervening spheres, or states, into the earth plane. It is this movement in vibration which I call energy.”

[\[151\]](#)

The spirit universe rests upon a cosmic energy platform, called, by Spiritism, universal fluid. From this, flows all forms of matter. The will of a spirit is able to modify the vibrational states and structure of universal fluid. Zabdiel explains further, “When I use the term vibration I do not speak merely of oscillation to and fro alone, but of movements which are sometimes elliptical, sometimes spiral, and sometimes a combination of these and other qualities.” [\[152\]](#)

[Allan Kardec](#), in *The Spirits Book*, supplies the definition of matter; “Matter is the element which enchains spirit, the instrument which serves it,

and upon which, at the same time, it exerts its action.” ^[153] Hence, the force of mind of a spirit controls and directs matter. And that which facilitates the command of matter by a spirit is universal fluid or energy as Zabdiel defines it.

Allan Kardec places universal fluid in the same context as Zabdiel, when he reported that spirits told him:

“The material element must be added the universal fluid which plays the intermediary between spirit and matter, the nature of the latter being too gross for spirit to be able to act directly upon it. Although, from another point of view, this fluid may be classed as forming part of the material element, it is, nevertheless, distinguished from that element by certain special properties of its own ... It is intermediary between spirit and matter, under the directing action of spirit, to produce the infinite variety of things of which you know as yet but a very small portion. This universal, primitive, or elementary fluid, being the agent employed by spirit in acting upon matter is the principle without matter would remain forever in a state of division, and would never acquire the properties given to it by the state of ponderability.” ^[154]

Ponderability being the state upon which matter rests as directed by the thoughts of a spirit. Although, as our science understands today, matter is never at rest, it is constantly in motion, vibrating, but to our eyes it holds a constant form and is endowed with certain physical characteristics.

Our current level of scientific discovery would agree with Zabdiel, when he states:

“From this point of view the atomic system of vibration, which has but of late been revealed to men of science, is to us one with the movement of the planets of this solar sphere, and of other systems far away in space. The motion of earth round the sun, the motion of the molecules of the atom are vibrations. It matters not by what degree you measure them, or what the diameter of the orbit, they are of one in kind, and in degree only do they differ each from other.” ^[155]

Picture a rectangular piece of wood. Unseen by our sight, it is a mass of vibrating atoms and molecules. To us, it has weight and it is dense. It is wood and it is square because of the motions within and the composition of

the universal fluid that directs it. Now, picture what would happen if the atomic elements were commanded to vibrate more rapidly, to alter their shape; the rectangle would no longer be a rectangle and the wood would transform into another substance.

As water changes to steam when heated, matter changes when the energy directed at it by the thoughts of a spirit into something slightly or radically different from whence it began.

Zabdiel explains what matter really is:

“Matter itself is the result of the transmutation of spiritual vibration into those of the grosser sort, and these later are now being analyzed by scientists who have come to the knowledge that matter is indeed the result of vibration, and that no article of matter is still, but in ceaseless movement. That is correct, but not conclusive, for it does not pursue the matter to the end of it. It were truer to say, not that matter is in vibration, but that matter *is* vibration, the results of vibration of a quality more refined, which is found, not in the phenomenon of material things, but in those spheres proper to its quality.” [\[156\]](#)

Hence, matter is material waiting to be transformed by spiritual directed energy. Zabdiel describes the process of the alteration:

“But transmutation brings into any such system a change of movement, and the quality of movement being changed, there is also, and of necessity, a change of result. Thus we, acting always in perfect obedience to laws laid down by those higher and wiser than ourselves, concentrate our wills on the movement of certain vibrations, which become deflected and transmuted into other qualities of vibration, and thus change is wrought.” [\[157\]](#)

The modification is usually accomplished gradually and deliberately. Step by step until the desired end state is attained. Matter in one state is now in another state.

Intention

From the beginning of slight alterations, brought on by the intended plan of a spirit or group of spirits, all is created and guided. Zabdiel tells us

that from this one process, this singular talent for focusing energy on an object and transforming it, all else follows:

“It is by this method that we deal with the actions of men, and the course of nature in all its parts. There are manifold classes and companies who have in charge the various departments of creation – mineral, vegetable, animal, human, terrestrial, solar, and stellar. Beyond this, also, the stars are grouped together and dealt with by hierarchies qualified for that great task.

It is by this same method, then, of the transmutation of energy that systems are gradually developed into worlds, and these worlds furnished with form, and then enabled to produce vegetation and animal life. But, this being so, you will note that all life, and all development, is consequent on the operation of spiritual energy obeying the dictates of the will of spiritual beings. This once grasped, blind force disappears, and intention takes its place – intention of intelligent and powerful spiritual workers of various grades operating according to certain fixed laws, but, within the bounds of laws free and mighty.” [\[158\]](#)

Hence, look up at the night sky and see not random stars, built within the confines of chaotic motion of matter spawned by the big bang. Instead see creation as planned, creation as willed by High Lords and carried out by a phalanx of lesser spirits. Everything we live upon and are, to the very curvature of our skull and the capabilities of our sight has been carefully planned.

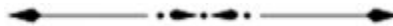
We are the direct result of deliberate objectives directed from on high. Our lives, in the same manner in which our physical form was molded, are guided by the desires of spirits (who may include ourselves, while in the spirit world) in the trials and obstacles we face on earth. Always, with our free will intact, to make choices and to suffer, either gladly or with remorse, the lessons offered to us, so we too, may be part of the cohort of spirits managing all life in the universe.

The knowledge that we live in a world of malleable clay which alters form and structure upon command should give us strength ... inner fortitude to understand that the vicissitudes of our life are all to a purpose. Everything we experience is not without meaning – for all is aimed with

love and kindness. Worlds, nations, and races are born, forged by heat, and deteriorate all for a designed cause. Zabdiel, reinforces this point:

“Thus you will see how little it matters that, when the time comes for you to cast off the body of earth, you stand discarnate. Your earth body was a body of vibrations and no more. Very well, you now have a body of vibrations more substantial and enduring, because of a higher quality, and nearer to the energizing Will which brought it into existence, and so sustains it. That body will serve you while you sojourn in the lower spheres and, when you have progress, that body will be transmuted into one still more permanent, and of quality more sublime. This process will be repeated as the ages go by and you proceed from glory to higher glory in the infinite reaches of progress before you.” [\[159\]](#)

We are on earth for a short period in disposable suits, designed to enhance our educational opportunities. Make the most of what comes our way and learn what is presented. Only by suffering through the stressful days and putting the good days in perspective can we cultivate the calm and wisdom to ascend.



Chapter 36 – Example of Spirit Power – Web of Light

The higher the spirit in the hierarchy of heaven the more power they possess to use their mind to shape and transmute elements. The ability of High Lords to affect objects in the spirit and physical universes is vast. Christ is the High Lord who governs over us on our globe and several other planets.

Zabdiel, in his communications to the Reverend G. Vale Owen, supplies a small example of how higher spirits shape the environment around them to do their bidding. In the previous chapter I wrote that Zabdiel revealed to us how, through the power of will, a high spirit manipulates matter.

Zabdiel was part of a group who accompanied a team of spirits, who were visitors from another sphere, to a lake. Where the spirits were to board boats and journey to their home level of heaven. During the final words of goodbye, Zabdiel spotted one of the high spirits of his sphere, who Zabdiel called a Prince, was approaching by air, with his attendants. Zabdiel tells us that spirits take pleasure in pleasing others by showing them effects manifested by their creativity:

“Far up in the heavens we saw them, as they moved slowly, circling about the Prince from whom to those in circle went threads of vibrations of different quality, and so of different color. These he of his will sent forth, and those his subordinates wove a network of curious design and very beautiful; and where two threads crossed there the intensified light shone like a stone of brilliant hue. And the knots were of many colors owing to the varying combination of threads entering into their construction.

When this was complete the circle widened out drew away and left their Prince alone in the midst. And he held the net by its middle in his hand, and it floated out around him like a many-colored spider web. It was very beautiful.

Now, that net was really a system of many qualities of vibrations woven together. He loosed it of his hand and it began slowly to sink as

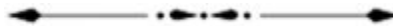
he rose through it, until it was level with his feet. Then he raised his hands and descended with it. And as he came he looked through the net at the boats below; and he made slow movements with his hands in their direction.

Then they began to move on the water as of themselves, and so continued until they floated in a circle. Then the net descended and settled over them, and we saw that they were all within its circumference, and also that, as it lighted on them, they passed through it and it sank and rested upon the water. Then the Prince, standing on the net and on the water, in the midst of the boats, waved his hand in greeting to them. And the net slowly arose from the water, lifting the boats with it, and floated upward into the air.

So away over the lake they went together, and the company of our sphere closed in around them, and sent up a song of Godspeed as they floated away towards the horizon over the lake.” [\[160\]](#)

Now you know why you are on earth ... to accumulate the required mental discipline to use your mind for fantastic creations, all for good. No small speck of unadulterated evil could be allowed to reside in a spirit with immense power.

Every trial you suffer and emerge a better person is one small step toward climbing the ladder toward perfection. To a future where you can give unlimited love and kindness; and help those in need. We are truly blessed to be given this opportunity on earth.



Chapter 37 – Spirit Comrades Meet – Growth at a Different Pace

Spirits form close friendships in the spirit realm as well as on earth. At times, nothing is more satisfying than being with close friends. In the spirit world, as on earth, there are circumstances that may cause friends to part. One possibility is some of your close circle may be promoted to a higher sphere, or you may be promoted to a higher level than your close acquaintances.

There are stories where a group of friends would wait until all of them would ascend together. Others where the husband or wife would assist their spouse to become more pure and advance to the level where they may be together. Being on a different level doesn't mean all contact is ended, only less frequent. After all, it is challenging for a spirit to visit another spirit on a higher level.

The difficulty lies in the fact that as a spirit advances they become purer and brighter. The light increases in intensity as one climbs the spiritual ladder. Hence, a lower spirit can't see or only barely detect a higher spirit because of the brightness emanating from their body. The brilliance is uncomfortable.

Zabdiel writes about us how he met two friends in Book Two of the book *The Life Beyond the Veil* called *The Highlands of Heaven*. He tells the Rev. G. Vale Owen how comrades in one sphere may temporarily separate while one or more climb higher into the next spiritual sphere. He relates his own personal experience. He starts by describing how he was walking to a temple, along a steep path up a mountain:

“Here and there along the path ascending are shrines, set a little off the way, like those in many lands of earth. And as I stood before one of these, a little removed, I covered my eyes with my hands, and stood thus awhile to commune with Him Who of His Life gives strength to us to follow after Him in the Heavenly road. Thus it was that I did not hear when some drew nigh me until their steps were present with me on the path behind. Then they ceased and I, having finished my offering,

turned and saw those whose light showed me of their degree that it was not mine, but higher in the spheres. So I bowed myself to them, and stood with eyes to look upon the ground, and waited for them to tell out their will and purpose with me.” [\[161\]](#)

I have read in other Spiritist literature, most notably in the Andre Luiz series of books (psychographed by Francisco C. Xavier), where spirits on a higher level are treated with the utmost deference. Being a republican (the definition, not the American political party) at heart, the thought of genuflecting to anyone because of their status is not pleasing to me. After all, why humbly bow to those who have been born into their station and have done nothing to earn the courtesy of showing respect.

But, after a second thought, I would not hesitate to demonstrate my admiration for a person I truly thought was superior to me. Superior to me in demonstrating love and kindness, assistance to those less fortunate or who devotedly gave themselves to the betterment of mankind. For instance, if Saint Francis of Assisi were alive today, I would not pause to bow before him in reverence to his contribution to our society.

Therefore, knowing that a spirit may only ascend through their dedication to love, charity, fraternity, and honesty ... plus their demonstration of actively assisting mankind on earth or people on other planets, I and others should have no problem with showing respect. And more, being ready to follow any requests they may have for me, since their utmost priority is always to push the good ahead and educate the ignorant.

Zabdiel continues:

“But I stood for long and they did not speak to me. So, making bold from the silence of them, I raised my eyes and looked upon them, first at the girdle of their robes to understand of what order they might be. Thus I understood that they were of those messengers who attended their Chief on his journeyings, both. Such they were as you shall call them aides-de-camp to their Leader.” [\[162\]](#)

Here is the second salient fact about the spirit world in Zabdiel’s story of meeting higher spirits: The presence of a type of uniform or signs of an office or status in belts or other forms for spirits belonging to different groups. While this is not overtly mentioned in the series of [Andre Luiz](#)

books, the presence of uniforms is referenced in Yvonne Pereira's book *Memoirs of a Suicide*. From this one can detect why uniforms are so prevalent on earth. Incarnates naturally gravitate towards how life is ordered in the spirit world. Hence, the pride in belonging to an order or specific function follows from our hidden desires brought over from our time in the spirit realm.

Waiting for some response from the higher spirits who encountered Zabdiel on the path, he decides to take the initiative:

“Then, they still continuing in silence, I looked on their faces. They were aglow with smiling; and amusement was not lacking in their smile. So I steadfastly gazed upon them, and at first I could discern little, for it was no easy matter that I should penetrate through that radiance shimmering around them then, to see their features whether I knew them or no. But, catching some of their power, as is the manner at such times, I did at length come to a knowledge of their countenances. Then I understood. They were two old comrades who, when we did service nearer to the earth plane, had fought for souls and won them out of the darker regions into the light of the Presence. And I had been their minister then, and their companion.” [\[163\]](#)

Two old friends, and friends that Zabdiel use to lead in efforts to help souls ascend from the lower regions. This perfectly demonstrates that each rises as they are able to learn. One may ascend rapidly while others may slowly climb the ladder to higher spheres. It makes no difference, for all are treated with love and respect in all levels of heaven. No one is forced to move upwards; for your free will is, at all times, respected. One could dally at a certain heavenly stage for as long as one likes. The impetus to graduate to the next level lies on your shoulders.

Another interesting revelation is that the higher spirits imparted power to Zabdiel. This demonstrates the capabilities of spirits higher than us ... they are able to marshal their will to focus power upon other spirits or objects as they see fit.

Finally, Zabdiel recognizes his two old friends, who were waiting patiently and expectantly for him to realize who they were:

“They came to me, when they saw the dawning recognition in my eyes, and, taking each a hand in his, we went together up the hill ascending, and on towards the Temple plateau, they kissing me first on either cheek, and so imparting further of their strength, to be and to converse with them.

Oh, the bliss and the great pleasure of that walk, when they who had been advanced beyond my present estate spoke first of old times and service together and, gradually leading, came to present times in this my own sphere, and then we spoke, in sequence, of their own more bright and glorious, to which soon, perhaps, I could be called.” [\[164\]](#)

The pleasure of their company is apparent in the words written by Zabdiel. So is the lack of envy or jealousy of his friend’s new station. This is because all are advanced according to their own time and merits. There is no favoritism, one is ready or not, when the time comes, graduation is imminent. This is how a true meritocracy functions. Where every individual concentrates on their improvement instead of focusing their energies on political gamesmanship.



Chapter 38 – How Spirits Communicate with Us

On Monday, December 3rd, 1917 at 5:25 p.m. in England, the spirit Kathleen, speaking directly to the mind of a medium said:

“When we come to earth, friend, we say one to another by the way that we are going into the land of mist and twilight, that we may, in the interior world which we find there, shed abroad somewhat of our light and warmth, For, indeed, that these be much needed we are able to sense, even in those far spheres from which we come. You may wonder by what process of chemistry or dynamics this is made possible to us; and, in detail. But we are able to give you a somewhat epitomized account of this affair, and so we will, if it would be of interest to you, and those who shall come to read what we give you.” [\[165\]](#)

Spirit Kathleen told this to the Rev. G. Vale Owen in the book *Life Beyond the Veil*, in *The Ministry of Heaven* section.

Kathleen stated that the background to make communication possible is that we all live in the spirit universe. Our physical universe is a subset of the overall spirit domain. She tells us that we live in one ocean of spirit-energy. And there are no sharp boundaries, only graduations of ratios of energy versus matter, light and darkness, and so on. It is as if we all lived in the ocean, with certain species existing at great depths, with the entire weight of miles of water above them and little or no light bleeding down; while others living further up, with less weight upon them and more light. Communication between disparate species would be difficult, but it would be possible.

This is just one of the great revelations brought to us by Spiritism. That we don't live in an encapsulated bubble, walled off from the afterlife. We live in the midst of spirit life, hence our transformation from physical to spirit life is not as traumatic as it would appear to us. It is the inadequacy of our senses which makes the transition seem so huge, so formidable. We are merely changing state, not being dissolved atom by atom. Our personality remains intact.

Kathleen then goes on to detail three methods which are employed to handle communications between spirits and incarnates.

Continuous Posting

“There is the method of continuous posting, wherein those workers nearest you hand on messages and reports to those in the sphere above, and they continue the operation until the message comes to its destination where it is to be appropriately dealt with. This is done swiftly – and yet in the flight of any message through the spheres it is sifted in each and that extracted which is proper to the workers of that particular sphere to undertake its answer. Also, messages from workers and prayers from the earth are filtered and made suitable for transmission into higher realms. Were this not done their earth grossness would weigh them down so heavily that what was in them of sublimity would not be competent to rise and come to the sphere where it is appropriate it should find destination.” [\[166\]](#)

Hence, prayers, pleas, and overtly spoken requests for divine intervention are indeed noticed, taken, and sent upwards to be analyzed and answered. Like the Wells Fargo team of horses, that delivered mail from one outpost to another to eventually reach its destination, our appeals are loaded upon swift carriers to their journey's end.

The New Testament tells us the power of prayer:

"Whatever you may ask for in prayer, believe you will receive it, and it will be granted to you." (Mk. 11:24)

There is an explanation of this verse in Allan Kardec's, *The Gospel According to Spiritism* :

"There are persons who contest the effectiveness of prayer, and they base their argument on the principle that if God knows our needs, it is superfluous to share them. They add further that, since everything in the universe is linked together by external laws, our desires cannot change God's decrees.

Without any doubt there are natural and immutable laws which God cannot derogate according to one's caprice; there is a great distance, however, from believing this and believing that all life's circumstances are subject to fatalism. If such were the case, humans would only be a passive instrument with no free will or initiative. Under such a

hypothesis, there would be no other recourse than to bend one's head under the blow of every event, without seeking to avoid it; no effort would be made to try to avert danger." [\[167\]](#)

Hence, we must use our free-will to shape events in our favor while keeping in mind the Divine Laws, such as the Golden Rule. Staying within a harmony of love for all, we are free to fervently pray for assistance and a correct and good outcome to any situation.

Now, the interesting part is that anything we ask for, we will receive it. One must look at this over the arc of an immortal life. One would not grant a fourteen year old boy his own car to drive. He would have to take classes and pass tests. His prayer would be granted, but not for years, which would seem to be an eternity for him.

The same section also tells us:

"What God will grant them, if asked with trust, is courage, patience and resignation. What God will also grant them are the means to extricate themselves from their difficulties with the aid of ideas suggested by good spirits at God's urging, thus leaving them the merit. God helps those who help themselves." [\[168\]](#)

Hence, the more we contribute to what we desire, if the goal is worthy, the more help that will be forthcoming. All of this is in harmony with God's Laws, since using our free-will to successfully complete a trial given to us; where we provide our sweat, our hard work, our dedication, our activity, intelligence, and prayer; all contributes to where the spirit realm will encourage our success to speed us on our way to ascend spiritually. After all, the goal of every soul is to one day become a pure spirit, and to assist others along the way.

Now let's examine those prayers and pleas which are not aimed at growth or goodness. In the book, *Between Heaven and Earth*, by the spirit Andre Luiz and psychographed by Chico Xavier, there is a question about prayer. A spirit student asks the spirit Clarencio an interesting question, "Could a person bent on committing a crime also be using a type of prayer?"

Clarencio answers:

"Let's refrain from using the word 'prayer' when dealing with imbalance. Let's use 'invocation' instead. Whenever anyone nourishes the desire to commit a wrong, he or she is invoking powers of a low order and is mobilizing resources for which he or she will be held accountable. By means of the unfortunate impulses of our soul, we often lower ourselves to the frenetic vibrations of anger or immorality, and in such a state it is easy to fall into the foul well of crime, in whose den we are instantly connected to certain minds stagnated in ignorance, which become instruments for our low idealizations or for which we become deplorable playthings in the darkness. All our aspirations set energies in motion for either good or evil, and for that very reason we are responsible for their direction. We must carefully analyze the choice we make in dealing with any problem or situation on the pathway set out before us because our thought will sail before us to attract and shape our intended purpose. In every area of existence, life gives us what we really ask for, and we become debtors according to what we have received." [\[169\]](#)

A theme we always return to; we must learn to control our thoughts. Even trivial occurrences, such as when a person becomes an obstacle in our way; don't most of us immediately send out bad vibrations toward that person. I know I am guilty of that. There is little difference between that and actively wishing for a wrong to be committed.

Clarencio warns us to be careful of what we want, because we may get it!

He goes on to be more specific on the consequences:

"We can be certain, however, that evil is always a circle closed in on itself, temporarily holding those who have created it. It's like a cyst of short or long duration, which finally dissolves into the infinite good as Minds in tune with it start reforming themselves. The Lord puts up with disharmony so that through it the moral readjustment of the spirits who sustain it may take place, since evil reacts on those who practice it, helping them to grasp the excellence and immortality of the good, which is the unshakeable foundation of the Law. We are all master of our own creation, but at the same time, their unfortunate slaves or happy wards. Let us ask and receive, but let us bear in mind that we

must pay for everything we get. Responsibility is the divine principle that no one can escape." [\[170\]](#)

"Evil reacts on those who practice it" - how true! We have seen time and time again the plight of various acquaintances who attempt to get away with some deed only to end up once more on the short side of life. The rewards of wrong-doing are transitory, the rewards of goodness build on the path to immortal contentment.

Next, the spirit Kathleen describes the direct method of communication.

Direct Method of Communication

This method entails a high spirit talking directly to us. As an ambassador would speak for his country, a high spirit would be given the authority to perform whatever tasks are required to assist (or hinder from a foolish act) us in our physical life. Kathleen explains:

“There are those of you who have guides in the spheres for special work and guidance. Some of these guides are very high and bright angels, and their proper home is far above those spheres bordering on the earth. They may not ever be coming down to those of their charges, for, high as they be, they are not all powerful, and to descend to earth is expensive of energy, by reason of the necessity of conditioning themselves to the spheres through which they pass, and in each sphere there is a new condition for them to achieve until they come to earth. This is done from time to time, and, indeed, not seldom, when such work is afoot as to warrant such undertaking. But we are ever careful of waste, who have so much to do for others’ help, and do not spend lavishly, even of that which is infinite in its supply. We can do our work better, as a rule, by the method of direct communication.” [\[171\]](#)

One is never sure the number of humans on earth who are on vital missions. These could range from helping a small town grow through new business or finally obtain a clean government, building a religious or healing center, to leading a country.

While all of us have a mission, to improve, some are called for an elevated purpose. One example of a person, where I am certain that a high spirit was assigned, is Francisco (Chico) Xavier. In his case we even know

the name of the spirit mentor, Emmanuel. In fact, it is widely known in Brazil, that when Chico died in 2002, Emmanuel, who had previously left Chico's side a few years earlier, was incarnating in Brazil and Chico would be his spirit guide in the 21st century. Hence, rotating responsibilities, where one friend is on earth and the other in the spirit realm, fully documents the closeness of how we are watched and guided by superior angels in heaven.

Kathleen expounds upon the method, she tells us how such a direct link is created and maintained:

“In order to establish this we devise a kind of telephone or telegraph – to use your own speech – a cord of vibrations and pulsations between us and you, and it is constructed of the blended vitality of the guide and the guided. I use here words I like not overmuch, but I cannot find other in your brain to use, so they must stand. I refer to such words as ‘construct,’ ‘vitality,’ and such as these. Sympathetic intercourse is by this means rendered continuous and sustained.

It is like the system of nerves between the body and the brain; it is always potentially operative, whenever need arises of help to be given. Whenever the charge turns to his far-away guide in thought or longing, that guide himself is at once aware and gives answer in the way he judges best.” [\[172\]](#)

Kathleen uses the best words she could find in the mind of a non-scientific person in the 1910s. Imagine the spirit realm trying to deliver these advanced concepts to the tribes of Israel thousands of years before Christ.

This is why we are told by Spiritism, that books such as the Old and New Testament and other ancient religious writings were fashioned for the culture and technical level of the humans receiving it. If Kathleen were attempting to convey this notion today, she could speak plainer and in concepts a normal person could comprehend. She could tell us that the link between the spirit and the person is like having a cell phone that is always on and dialed into each other. Their respective geographical locations would never be an impediment to communication. One merely needs to touch to activate and either speak or text a query.

The Cloud

“There is a third method, but more complicated than either of these I have summarized. It may, perhaps, be given such a name as universal, which is bad enough, but must serve. In the first process the stream of thought passing from earth to spheres more or less remote is handled and modified in each sphere as it travels on its way, like a continuous post across continents – only there is no change of horses nor pause on the way. In the next, the line is ever open and ever charged, like a telephone with electricity, and is direct in a line from the man on earth to the guide in his own proper sphere.

In the third the process is distinct from either of these. It is that by which every thought and action of man is reported in the heavens, and may, by those competent to do so, be read from time to time, These records are real and permanent, but the aspect of them and their method of constructure it is not possible for us to explain. Words have been very strained to serve in the first two descriptions. Here they fail in total. I will say but this, that every thought of every man has a universal application and effect. Call it ether, or what you will, the fluid which fills the spheres is of so sensitive and so compact and continuous a substance that if you touch it with a sigh at one end of the universe the effect is registered at the other end. Here, again, ‘end’ is not a proper word to use, for in the sense you use it there is no significance here. But that of which I now try so lamely to come at, so that I may show somewhat of its wonder to you, is that which the Savior Christ had in mind when, wiser than I, He did not name it with any name, but spoke of it only as it is found to be in operation thus: ‘Not a hair of your head is hurt, not a fledging falls from its nest, but the Father of All is notified.’” [\[173\]](#)

“Every thought and action of man is reported” – this was written in 1917. Kathleen could not begin to describe how this process could work, but in 1955, thirty-eight years later - more was revealed.

In the Realms of Mediumship, psychographed by the Brazilian Spiritist Chico Xavier, published in 1955, I noticed an unusual introduction by the spirit Emmanuel, who usually writes moral exhortations. He began the introduction, titled, “Rays, Waves, Mediums, Minds...” by surveying the

history of science in what makes up our universe. He started with Leucippus, about 500 years before Christ, who theorized that everything was composed of atoms. Surveying others, including the Curies, who discovered radium. Finally mentioning Bohrs, Planck, and Einstein, whereupon he writes:

“The vehicle of flesh, the human body, is now nothing more than an electric vortex governed by consciousness.

Each tangible body is a bundle of concentrated energy. Matter is transformed into energy, and energy disappears to give way to matter.

Raised to the status of investigators of the truth, chemist and physicists, geometricians and mathematicians have become today’s priest of the spirit without desiring it. Due to their ongoing studies, materialism and atheism will be compelled to vanish for lack of matter, the base that had ensured their negativistic speculations.

Laboratories are temples in which intelligence is driven to serve God; and even when intellectual activity is misguided, temporarily subordinated to the political hegemony that generates wars, the progress of science as a divine conquest continues to exalt the good and is bound for a glorious future.

That future belongs to the spirit!” [\[174\]](#)

I believe he is telling us, that no matter what a scientist believes as regards to a higher power, he or she is working toward the day, when the existence of the spirit world can’t be doubted. Which, even *The Spirits Book*, by Allan Kardec, tells us will occur one day. Now for the new information which supplies the missing link to the spirit Kathleen’s description what she calls “universal”:

“Through the sentiments that characterize their inner life, all individuals emit specific rays and live within the spiritual wave with which they identify themselves.

Such truths cannot remain semi-hidden in our sanctuaries of faith; they will radiate from the temples of science like mathematical equations.”

[\[175\]](#)

Hence we all have a unique identification, the same as a RFID (Radio Frequency Identification) chip, which is used to track packages and even help you check out goods from a store. It is a chip with a low level energy transmitter that is attached to each individual good, so computer systems will instantly know the location, price, and description of the object.

Another example is the flow of information from our cell phones or laptops on the internet. Each packet of data has a unique identification in the header, so that nugget of data is tagged with who sent it, where it was sent from, the time it was sent, and the information contained in the message.

Think of each and every one of us as a cell phone, which is always on, always broadcasting our vital signs and thoughts. Our signals don't have a limit measured in feet, as our cells phones do, but are unlimited as they fly all around us, in all directions, to be picked up and stored in the Supreme Library.

Now turn your mind to the trillions (up to the power of infinity) packets of data that must emanate from every human or other creature from every planet in the universe(s). All captured and stored. All retrievable upon command. Never wiped clean or forgotten. Everything.

When the NSA (National Security Administration) was first presented with the mandate to pick out possible terrorist activity, they realized they required data from a myriad amount of sources; cell phones, social networks, internet message boards, electronic invoices, ATM transactions, and other avenues; they knew they were trying to find a needle in a haystack. But their brilliant first step was to realize that to find a needle in a haystack, one first must create a haystack. Hence, they built server farms with immense storage capability, and routed data from every application that we use in our daily life into one of the largest databases in the world (I surmise, but I have no direct knowledge of this). From this mountain of data, they could query and search the world for what they were tracking.

Therefore, for the Supreme Intelligence, our life is an open book. Nothing is missing. Every thought and deed is recorded. One only needs to know our unique identifier and all is revealed. All of it in the Universal Cloud, the database of all databases.

From Jesus, two thousand years ago, to 1917 during World War I, to 1955 during the Cold War, we are being updated on what is actually happening in the spirit realm and how they track us.

When one begins to read Spiritist literature, the parables that Jesus told us become clear. When He told us that the Father of All is notified of everything, this just wasn't just a sentiment to make us think twice before we commit a wrong act, but a statement of fact.

Only within the last ten to twenty years could enough people visualize how this could occur. We are only told when we have the capacity to understand the concepts presented to us. This is why, no literature presented to the human race should be regarded as the final and absolute word of God, since at each major stage of understanding ... we shall be given more information. Spiritism tells us that only the messages of love, fraternity, and charity are eternal, while all else is what was transmitted to people according to their level of sophistication at the time.

Therefore, understand well, there is no such thing as privacy. Nothing we do, say, or think is ever hidden or unexposed. We all live in glass houses. On one hand this is a frightening disclosure, but on the other, we all share the same circumstances. Spirits superior to us have all journeyed through their time of undisciplined thoughts – they all understand what we are going through – and they are all sympathetic to our plight. Just as we watch our young children make mistake after mistake, but ever-loving them, and spurring on their growth, the spirit realm benevolently looks down upon us.

One More Hypothesis

Take all that you have read ... we are connected to the universal cloud ... we all live in the spirit ocean ... we all send messages that can travel throughout the universe ... we can communicate between different states of existences. What does this imply?

As a thought experiment, think of your definition of distance. For us on earth it is the space, measured in miles or kilometers, between two points. Now think of a video game or a movie, where the characters travel throughout the universe they live in. There are distances in these man-made places. In the video game world, your avatar may have to travel from one

land to another, a real distance to them, as they cross rivers, mountains, and oceans. On the screen the scenes unfold, but all images are in fact driven by software – software programmed by a team of analysts, coders, and managers. An actor in the game may take a plane from one city to another, but in reality all within the confines of one studio.

On screen all appears immense, expansive landscapes unfold – all created by teams of people who are in close association with each other. Commands are spoken and heard, while on the screen it may appear that different actors are continents apart. In the software domain, all the landscapes, characters, and dialog are orchestrated by layers of systems – all in constant communication. Whereupon a change of state in one aspect is immediately transmitted to all other sub-applications that need to know. A central database holds all static and dynamic data.

Everything runs according to certain rules. For actors, there are limits to green screen interactions, their voices and the ability of microphones to pick up sound is a constant. In the video world, the capability of the computer running the game, the screen resolutions, and the memory size must all be respected.

This is the true world we live in. God is the creator, the director of our universe. He lays down the rules. Rules that, try as we may to ignore, are impossible to isolate ourselves from for long. We are the actors and constructed characters in the world. A world real to us ... for we are within it ... but constructed – constructed as the spirit Kathleen would say; as a vehicle for us to learn what we have been assigned.

We wander from one movie set or software operating system platform to another – each with its own specifications. Always – and this is important – taking with us our personality. This is the gift of God. We are given free-will to roam (as far as our capabilities will take us) in a land of many lands, in a mansion with many rooms.



Chapter 39 – Into the Darkness to Halt Evil

Good, high spirits, descend into the Lower Zones and below to help poor souls trapped in an atmosphere of ignorance and malevolence. Often they stand passive, awaiting a call for help or an opportunity to assist. But, there are times when action is called for. Here is one such example.

In most of the Spiritist literature that I have read to date, from Allan Kardec to Leon Denis to Francisco C. Xavier – higher spirits stand ready to help those who have finally reached the point where they cry out to God, seeking his love.

Usually, when an immature spirit is guided to seek a higher road, it is done through conversation, understanding, and doing favors for him or her, until they realize for themselves the superiority of kindness and serving others.

One Example of Containing an Evil Soul

One exception in the passive approach I found was in the book *Memoirs of a Suicide*, by Yvonne Pereira. In the book, Camilo, the spirit author, tells about the time he witness his spirit benefactors attempting to expose the past of a spirit so he would understand his own crimes and repent.

The spirit's name was Agenor, he had been in seclusion, a type of prison in a hospital center for suicides. He had been forcibly removed from the Lower Zone because he and his gang would prey on impressionable people. They would obsess them, cause them to commit suicide, and then use them, when their spirit left their body. He had been in isolation for thirty-eight years!

Here is what the high spirits said to Agenor, during one of his interrogations:

“Our reasons for depriving you of your freedom are explained every day. You know that you are guilty. You know that you have lured a dozen unwary individuals into committing suicide because they let themselves be deluded by the nefarious suggestions of your ploys as a cunning obsessor ... either disgracing them for the simple pleasure of doing evil, or because you were jealous of them for some reason ... just

as you used to do in the past when you disparaged poor maidens who were enamored with you and who carelessly trusted you, leading them to commit suicide after having been bitterly betrayed by you – an omen of your future as an obsessor ... But your pride stifles the logical conclusion of reason, and you prefer rebelliousness and sophism because they are more comfortable.” [\[176\]](#)

The high spirits went over his life – for his thoughts and the thoughts of those around him, are retrievable – and exposed all of the wrongs he had committed. From complete neglect of his parents – leaving his mother destitute and forgotten – to his lies to the women he took advantage of during his time on earth.

The high spirits knew that if he reincarnated with his present state of mind, his life would be no different from the previous time. That more people would be hurt and destroyed in the wake of his utter selfishness.

Descent into the Lower Regions

In the book, *Beyond the Veil*, the spirit Kathleen, speaking directly to Rev. G. Vale Owen spoke of a time when the spirit leader of the group of spirit communicating to him, went deep into the Lower Zones:

“From that colony we went further into the regions of gloom. We had done what we were able, going from group to group where houses clustered or where fires burned, and ministered comfort or advice to those who would receive us. But they were not of much readiness for the most part. Some few would be able to retrace their steps upwards from that place, but the many would have to descend lower in the misery of the further regions before their hardness should give place to despair, and despair should return into longing, and a glimmer of light should glow in those poor lost souls. Then would come repentance and amendment, and their toilsome journey towards the Valley of the Bridge. But that time was not yet at hand. So we left them, for we had our orders, and in our minds the map of the country by which to find our way to those places where special work awaited us. For we did not go at random into those dark places, but of purpose, set for us by those who sent us thither.” [\[177\]](#)

The Lower Zone isn't a land of lifeless evil zombies, the undead. Instead, it is where souls have left their bodies to go into the spirit realm find themselves when they are tied to the earth, either through materialism, or by dominance of lesser emotions, such as hate, envy, and jealousy. They reside there until they realize the futility of living in a land composed of anger and criminality.

God affords these souls their free will to make wrong choices and to live with those choices until they find a new path. High spirits are there, constantly watching, to help those who have determined they no longer wish a life of suffering.

The group of high spirits were sent to specific locations for a reason. They may have not known the exact purpose, but when they arrive at whatever area they were sent, they would know the correct action to take.

The Dark City

They arrived at a walled city in the Lower Zone:

“Thus we came to a large city, and entered through a massive gateway where guards marched to and fro. We had relaxed our will to visibility and so passed within unseen. We found the broad street beyond the gate was lined with great houses of heavy build like prison fortresses. From several of the wind-holes lurid flickering of light fell into the roadway and across our path. We went on until we came to a large square, where there was set up a statue on a high pedestal, not in the middle, but toward one side, where the largest building stood.” [\[178\]](#)

The statue appeared to be a man dressed in a Roman toga, in his left hand he had a mirror and with his right hand poured out red wine into a basin. Other images were nearby – most were satirizing the virtues of childhood, maternity, and love.

Next, they entered the building behind the statue and walked up the large stair case. They entered a great hall, with many people sitting, they were in their finest clothes – which looked like rags to the high spirits – listening to the leader speaking.

The leader, was the Governor of the city and surrounding territory. He had made himself larger in statue than the rest, so he could impose his will

on all of the lost souls that came within his grasp.

The good spirits were dishearten at what they saw:

“We would have turned away, but our task was set, and we must listen to his speaking until he had finished. It is painful for me to give, as it is for you to take, his story. But it is well, my brother that they still in the earth-life should come at the knowledge of what life is in those dark spheres, for there the mixture of the good with the bad no longer holds. The good go up, the evil sink into their own lower places, and the tempering of evil with the good is not of the economy of those infernal regions. So evil left together with evil works blasphemies which are not possible in the composite society of earth.” [\[179\]](#)

On earth, we all live together, the good, the bad, and the indifferent. Human nature causes us to conform to the norm. In polite society, even a wicked person must put on the appearance of civility to be able to blend in and survive.

Whereas, in the Lower Zones, after the Divine Law of Affinity, has filtered the bad to where they belong and the good into the spheres of light and love – all that is left are those who are of ill intent. There is an absence of any pull to perform good or decent acts. There is only what life is like in a prison, where the inmates run the compound – force is king and nothing else is respected.

God uses evil to fight evil, so any soul who embraced the darkness would sooner or later discover the pitfalls of living amongst people like themselves. There are no idealists, no willing and loyal subordinates ... only menacing men and women biding their time, looking for any weaknesses to be exploited.

The dark Governor’s rhetoric was an inversion of the Gospel of Jesus. He had made himself imposing and feared so he could reign over weaker souls. And as such, he taught them he was like the Beast that slaughtered the lamb. The lamb was weak, but its blood useful in feeding the Beast. Hence the Beast should be worshiped and he would lead them in their endeavors. He spoke about Moloch and other subjects – all meant to enslave his audience and to feel that they could only depend on him in this cruel and terrible world they had found themselves.

The high spirits waited patiently for the malicious Governor to finish his discourse and descend back to the crowd. The high spirits gathered behind and above the Governor. One woman of their group stepped forward and made herself visible. She showed herself all dressed in white, radiating light:

“A lady of our company stood some half dozen steps below us. Her chaplet of emeralds shone fair upon her brow as it bound her brown-gold hair, and the jewel of order upon her shoulder shone brighter and true of her own virtue. About her middle was a belt of silver. And all these showed in relief against those tawdry jewels of the crowd before her. And in her arms she held a bundle of white lilies. She stood there, the presentment of pure womanhood in all its perfect loveliness, a challenge to the late speaker’s ribald cynicism of her race.

Then, when a long time they had looked upon her, both the men and women there, one of them sobbed and tried to smother the sound in her mantle. But then the others gave way before the returning upon them of their sometime womanhood, and the hall was filled with the wailing of the women – oh, so hopeless to hear in that place of misery and of bondage, that the men also began to cover their faces with their hands, to sink upon the ground, and to press their foreheads in the thick dust upon the floor.

But now the Governor took himself in hand, for he saw his power at hazard. He began to stride in great anger over the bodies of women to get at her who first had set the pace to weeping. But now I came down to the lowest step and called to him, ‘Stay your hand and come hither to me.’

At this he turned and leered at me, and began to say, ‘But, you, my lord, are welcome, so you come in peace among us. Yet these poor cravens be too much bedazzled of the light of that fair lady behind you, and I do but seek to bring them to their reason, so they shall give you proper welcome.’” [\[180\]](#)

The Governor knew he and his men were no match for the power of high spirits. He tried to weasel out of the situation with as little cost as possible. He attempted to hide his anger at having to quickly obey another’s

command – such is the force of a high spirit compared to a dense dweller in the Lower Zone.

The Exile of the Governor

The group of high spirits weren't sent just to interrupt a speech. They were sent on a mission and now the mission was to be revealed. The spirit in charge told the Governor:

“But I said very sternly to him, ‘Cease and come hither.’ So he came and stood before me, and I continued, ‘You have taken upon you to blaspheme, both in speech and also by your trappings. Take off that crown of blasphemy and lay down the shepherd’s crook, you dare to mock at One Who claims these His children whom you hold in your bond of fear.’ These things he did, and then I spoke to some men standing near, and I said to them more gently, ‘You have been cowards too long, and this man has enslaved you, body and soul. He shall be taken to a city where one stronger in evil might than he rules. Do you, who have served him hereto, do now my bidding. Disrobe him of that mantle and that girdle which he has donned in his mockery of Him Whom even he shall own someday his Sovereign Prince and Lord.’

And then I waited, and there came forward four of them and began to unbuckle his belt. He turned in fierce rage upon them, but I had taken the staff from him, and this I laid upon his shoulder, and at the touch he sensed the power within me and strove no more. So my will with him was done; and then I bade him go forth of the hall into darkness without, where guards awaited to take him into that far region where as he had done to others it should be done to him.” [\[181\]](#)

Two vital points about what occurred. First, the power of a high spirit over a lower spirit is absolute. It is as if an adult confronted a four-year-old – there would be no contest, in will or strength.

Superheroes are real and they are high spirits. They are powerful and use their overwhelming force for good and only good. This is why we are being trained; one day we too shall have supremacy over countless lower spirits – we must be prepared to use our strength wisely and fairly at all times.

Secondly, the Governor is being sent to a place where he shall be under the command of a soul more evil and more powerful than he. He shall be given the privilege of learning what it was like to be under his direction. This is not a punishment for a bad man, it is an extreme learning exercise for one who refused to comprehend a previous lesson delivered in a gentler manner.

One day, even the Governor shall rise. One day his suffering will be too much to bear. One day he will wake and decide to change. And on that day he will lift his head up and gaze into the direction where the high spirits came from and ask for help – and it shall be given.

After the Bloodless Revolution

After the Governor left, another high spirit started to sing. He didn't sing a hymn but a happy and rousing song to lift their spirits. The poor souls in the audience required a change of mood – from fear and despair to hope and happiness. The light in the great hall changed from dark and gloomy to bright and merry.

The high spirits didn't leave the city after they finished with the Governor. They waited for another team to come, so the people of the city could be led to a higher plane. Toward the light.

The Rev. G. Vale Owen upon hearing this story, asked how did the guards know to come from the lower city? What he was told demonstrates the omnipotence of God:

“Ah, there you touch one of the difficult matters to understand until you learn more of the ways of God His Wisdom, and His Sovereignty. In brief, know you, friend, that God is Sovereign not in Heaven alone but in Hell also, and in all the Hells He rules and He alone. The others dominate locally, but He rules over them all. The guards I spoke of were men of that same city to which we sent the man. Evil men they were, and did not own allegiance to the Creator of them all. But knowing not whose judgement delivered this one more victim into their hands, nor knowing it was for his ultimate salvation, they did our will without ado. You may find the key here, if you go beneath and deep enough, to much of that which happens on your earth.

Evil men by many are thought to be outside the pale of His Kingdom; and evils and disasters to be faulty manifestations of His dynamic energizing. But both are in His hand to use, and even evil men, unwitting, are made to work out his plans and purpose in the ultimate.”

[\[182\]](#)

No one, not one person does not partake in the aims of God. Even the most horrific tyrants of our time, Hitler, Stalin, and Mao, in some mysterious manner contributed to earth’s plan. What this trio of evil personified did was wicked indeed, but it must have had an ultimate purpose. If only to ward off future generations to the great disaster that Fascism and Communism carry with them.

We, the living on earth, in our short lives, are unable to discern the great arc of history. The spirals of progress and destruction, ever upward – but hard to discern to our eyes – all have a purpose and a goal.

What are the multitude of interweaving story lines for individuals, nations, and cultures is beyond me. But, I do know the ultimate goal ... for earth to become a planet of regeneration.

Earth will eventually be free of copious selfishness, hate, envy, and the wars that base emotions cause to spring forth. Everything that we, as a human race, has experienced in the thousands of years since we became aware, has been to develop the souls on this planet from primitive to mature and educated spirits.

When a majority of us incarnate on earth as peace-loving, rational, and kind souls, the earth will begin to move to a better place. A world which will be a paradise compared to the one we inhabit presently.

The engine to drive us onward is the untiring actions of high spirits. Elevated souls who toil for the incarnate and discarnates on and around the earth – so someday we may take our rightful place alongside them.



Chapter 40 – Freeing 144,000 – The City of the Mines in the Lower Levels of the Spirit Realm

A group of high spirits – sent from the tenth level of heaven – journeyed down to the Lower Zone. They were sent on orders from above to free souls who have been trapped in the regions around the earth after they had lived a life of materialism and base emotions, and were sent to servitude, to live amongst others like themselves. They were ready to peer upwards to the light for inspiration. At the end of the mission, the high spirits had amassed 144,000 people from the lower regions of the spirit realm and led them to a new city.

High spirits are powerful entities, but even they, who are high to our perspective are directed by even superior beings. Commanded by orders and other subtle means to carry out the conversion and rescue of souls living in the darkness.

Learning On the Job

Before coming to the City of the Mines, the group had touched other outposts of darkness and they learned from each encounter. One such encounter was discussed in the previous chapter. This is what the leader of the high spirits told the Rev. G. Vale Owen, during a medium session in January 1918:

“As we went about those parts on our business of help and mercy we found our prearranged plan had been very curiously made for us. Each colony we visited gave to our store of knowledge some experience a step in advance, so that, as we ministered to others, we ourselves were ministered to through them by those who watched over their welfare and our schooling.” [\[183\]](#)

Spiritism has revealed to us that our life is predetermined – we have free will in our choices and attitude – but we shall face the episodes of life that have been chosen for us. Very little is left to chance and copious amounts of planning are invested to chart our course in life. The same is true even of spirits in heaven, in special circumstances.

When they are sent on a mission – the target of the mission is indeed vital, but the spirit world does nothing without also instilling an edifying aspect to whatever the person or group undertaking the task experiences. The overall theme is simple ... opportunities for improvements for everyone. The plots, twists, and counter-plots to achieve this are incredibly complex.

This is why, when you feel the onslaught of hard times, know well, your current pit of troubles isn't by chance, but a lesson. A happenstance that is not random, but in reality planned. Set before you for a purpose. You can read more about the types of drama hurled our way in my book [*The Problem is the Solution*](#), where you will learn, that if you analyze your current life, you will realize the lessons you are involved with now and in your past, are valuable prospects for growth.

Travels through various villages and encampments in the Lower Zone provided the preparation and hardening required to make them ready for their most difficult assignment. It wasn't just that each location had its local boss. The one most cunning and dominating of characters usually rose to the top. The cruel Lord kept his subjects in check by fear.

The difficulty wasn't over powering the dictator of the location, it was how to lessen or remove the fear to allow his subjects a glimmer of light to sink in; so that they could make a decision to flee to freedom and goodness or remain behind.

At the Gates of the City of Mines

The group described their entrance to the city:

“We found that in nearly every colony there was one master-mind – and here and there more than on nearly equal in forcefulness of character – who dominated the rest, and enslaved them by the dread he sent forth upon them. Here is one whose city we came once after a long journey through a very desolate and forsaken country. The city itself was built about with a strong wall, and it was large in area. We went within, and were challenged by the guard at the gateway. There was a company of ten there on guard, for the gate was principal and large, with double wings. These men were all of giant stature, having much developed in their wickedness. They called upon us to stay, and questioned us,

‘Whence came we last?’ ‘From going on our ways about the wilderness.’ We gave answer to their captain. ‘And what business do you purpose here, good sirs and gentlemen?’ he said, for he had been of culture in the earth-life and that burnish still was upon his manners, but it was now tintured with some malice and with mockery, as is the manner of most in those sad places.

To this question we answered – I for the company, ‘We have a mission to the workers in the mines where your master enslaves them.’

‘A very engaging end for your journey,’ he said with pleasant accents, seeking to deceive us. ‘These poor souls work so hard they be ready for any good friend who should take stock of them, their existence and their troubles.’

‘And some,’ I said, ‘be also ready to depart hence free of the yoke of your lord, which, each in his degree, is bond upon you all.’

At once his face changed from smiling to one dark frowning, and his teeth showed like the teeth of a hungry wolf. Moreover, with the change of his mood there seemed to descend a darker mist and settle about him. He said, ‘Do you say I am enslaved also?’ ‘A very slave and bond for your master, a slave himself and a driver of slaves.’ ‘That he shall make you as one of us, for you shall come to be shortly of those who dig for the gold and iron for our lord.’

With this he turned about and bade his guards seize us and take us to their ruler’s house. But I stood a little nearer to him and laid my hand upon his right wrist, and the contact was agony to him, so that he let go his short sword which he had drawn quickly upon us. I still held him while the auras of him and me made disturbance about his soul, to his agony, but not to mine, for, being of greater strength in force of spiritual power, I went unscathed, while he was anguished. Spiritual dynamics, this, to be studied if you choose, among your own incarnate neighbors. The principle is of universal application, as you shall find if you search it out.” [\[184\]](#)

A mere touch and the battle was over. A wicked captain of the guard, one who had been in the Lower Zone for quite some time, since he had physically made himself imposing and was not unmindful of the power of

thought, even in that cold dark city, he was instantly disarmed by spiritual superiority.

Spiritual Superiority

What is it? What is this power of goodness? Spiritism tells us that everyone is partly good, even the guards at the gate. That there is no such thing as evil itself, for evil is actually the ignorance and absence of good. When the void of goodness is touched by the force of light and love, the pain of being empty can be severe.

We on earth, believe in the power of love and goodness. It does affect us. Think of the image of the lone student in front of the tank at Tiananmen Square in Beijing, China during the brief demonstrations for freedom. While the rulers wished to crush all opposition, they knew they couldn't crush a pure desire for freedom outright.

Gandhi and Martin Luther King both demonstrated the potential for passive action and love and yearning for justice in changing the world. Morality is within us and it is our conscience. It is a gift from God.

The founding fathers of the United States were correct, mankind was created with certain unalienable rights. The Supreme Intelligence gave us the gift of free will, which in concert with our conscience ultimately will lead us to a pure state. A state of love, fraternity, and honor without rancor, hate, or envy. The trek may take many lives, but each of us will one day be victorious.

The poor souls in the Lower Zone are us, we who are in-between lives on earth, who are in that miserable state to teach us what life is like when we allow our ignorance to keep the good out.

But there is another kind of spiritual superiority. It is not intangible, but real. As spirits ascend the levels of heaven, they become less dense and composed of more energy. Spirits aren't merely more loving and kind, they are transformed and able to channel the power of the spirit world through their will. When we or a lower spirit touches a higher spirit (without preparation by the higher spirit) it is as if we come into contact with a live wire – the electrical shock could harm, if not kill us.

The combination of energy and goodness transmitted from the high spirit to the Captain paralyzed and stunned him. He was ready for any type of physical resistance, but not the overwhelming blast of energy and love – which sent him reeling.

The high spirit knew full well what was happening to the hapless soldier, he told him:

“Then I said, ‘We are not of these dark spheres, sir. We come from a place in sunlight of the Presence of Him Whose life you have partaken, and violated it to evil purposes. For you it is not yet the time to win freedom of these walls and the tyranny of cruel masters here.’

Then he broke down through the thin shell of his lordly bearing and cried piteously, ‘Why may not I also go free of this hell and devil who lords it here? Why others, if not I?’

And I replied, ‘You are not yet accounted worthy. Watch what we do in this place, do not oppose your will to ours, help us in what we have in hand to do, and , when we have gone hence, then ponder on it well and long, and perchance even you will find in us somewhat of blessing.’

‘Blessing,’ he sneered and laughed, with naught of music in his laugh. And then he said, a little more soberly, ‘Well, what would you have of me, good sir?’” [\[185\]](#)

The Captain of the guard thought over the proposition and motioned the spirits to follow him. He spoke out loud, but to himself, of the injustices he encountered in the city, as if he was convincing himself of the righteousness of the cause that he became a part of.

He took them through the hovels that lined the streets. Some mere lean-tos where the slaves could rest a bit before their next shift. At last they reached the opening of the mines. A dreadful odor poured out of the opening. Even the Captain grimaced.

The leader of the high spirits spoke to the Captain:

“Seeing this I called to him, and he halted and glanced back and upward at us, and his face was agonized and gray. So I said to him, ‘Why are you become so sad, my guide? You have put on a sorry aspect since you drew near the mouth of these mines.’

‘Sir,’ he answered, and meekly now, ‘I was once of those who work with pick and spade within these hell furnaces, and the fear of it comes upon me now.’

‘Then search into your inmost soul for a grain of pity for those who work there now where once you suffered so sorely.’

He sank upon a boulder by the side of the path, overcome of weakness, and replied to my words with stranger words of his own, ‘Nay, nay, ‘tis needful be pitied by them, not they by me. Their lot is hell, but mine is hell ten times doubled.’

‘How, since you have escaped their slavery and come forth of the mines into a better state of service to the one you call your lord?’

‘I thought you were some one great in wisdom,’ he replied with a bitter smile, ‘and yet you do not understand that to fly from one state of servitude to another of higher degree in authority is to put off a hair-shirt for one with thorns and brambles for web and woof.’

And then I took shame to myself that I had but just learned that lesson on top of others gathered of our experience in those dark tracts of hell. They who live there in the darkness of death are ever reaching out after an easier fate, and grasp any chance of escape from servitude by promotion to some post of authority. And when advanced to that post, they find the glamour fade away into the miasma of fear, being more nearly in contact with the archfiend, who by his brutality and remorseless malice has seized the chief power. Yes, the glamour dies, and hope dies with illusion.” [\[186\]](#)

The spirits communicated a great truth to G. Vale Owen in the beginning of 1918 – evil and criminal deeds take a terrible toll. All of us have a conscience, while we can rationalize away our errors, we know in our hearts what we have done is wrong. It depletes us, it puts our body and soul into disharmony.

We look at great villains of history and their henchman and think them to be mindless immoral robots, completely devoid of feelings. But think of the price they pay, while they live and eventually in the afterlife. Ponder what the communist functionaries in China, North Korea, and Cuba must take with them before they fall asleep at night. Are they gleeful about the

number of people they abused, arrested, had put to death ... or are they worried that somehow they have become that which they abhor. But are trapped within the system and don't know how to extract themselves without penalty to themselves and to their families.

Down into the Mines

“From our vantage point we looked about, and, as our eyes became more used to the gloom, we saw that before us there lay a large stretch of territory, all underground. We could not see how far it reached, but there were passages leading off the main cavern, here and there, which disappeared in what seemed black darkness, Figures went hither and thither, to and fro, with furtive tread, as if afraid some horror should start up in their pathway when they were most unaware. Now and then the clanging of chains came up to us, as some poor fellow shuffled on his way in fetters; then a weird cry of agony and often a mad, wild laugh and the sound of a whip. All was sad both to hear and see. Cruelty seemed to float in the air as one sufferer gave vent to his agony by torturing another more helpless.” [\[187\]](#)

They looked over the expansiveness of the mine. Not only a series of tunnels for digging out metals, but chambers for smelting, manufacture of weapons and other articles for use and sell by the heartless lord of the city. They were underground, but not yet into the area where slaves worked at extracting ore. Instead they were inside a primitive factory, ran by slave labor and overseers.

After trekking down further and opening gate after gate, they finally reached a vast darkness. A black hole, where only eyes that have been long accustomed could see. There were multiple pathways, each leading to a distinct shaft. The high spirit thought for a second and then he made a decision:

“Having looked about me and received information from the Captain, our guide, I bade him open all the gates about us and those leading into the cavern into which we first came. But he replied, ‘Sir, it is in my heart to do this; but I fear my lord, the Chief. He is terrible in his anger, sir, and even now I have a dread upon me, lest some spying hound

should have sought to curry favor with him by carrying to him a report of what has already been done.’

And I answered to him, ‘It seems to me you have been progressing speedily since we came hither to this dark city, my friend. I marked once before an advance in good feeling, but did not advertise you of it. Now, I see, I was not in error, so I give you choice. Think quickly and decisively. We are here to lead forth those who are ready to go a little way toward the light. Will you come forth with us, or stay and serve your present lord? Choose quickly and presently.’

For a few seconds he stood and looked at me, and then at my companions, and then at the tunnels which led further into the darkness, and then gazed upon the ground at his feet. All this he did swiftly, as I had bidden him, and then replied to me, ‘Sir, I thank you. I will do as you bid me and open the gates. But I will not pledge myself to come forth with you. I dare not so much – yet.’

Then, as if the resolve to obey us had given him new vitality, he swung about, and, even in that dim light, I noticed an air of decision, and his tunic seemed to fall a little more gracefully upon his naked knees, and his flesh to take on a more comely and healthful aspect. By this I knew more of the change of his estate in spirit than he himself knew. It is thus on occasion that, where strength of character has been overlaid and buried beneath a load of iniquity, it will suddenly start forth afresh and fling wide the portals of its prison and make a dash for liberty and the sunlight of God. Yes, but that he did not know, and I was not quite sure of its staying power, so I held my peace until he had gone his way. I heard him calling, in strong voice, to the porter to open the gate. I heard him shout the same command to the second as he rushed up the tunnel towards it; and then his voice gradually became faint as he went farther away from us towards the great cavern into which we had ourselves first come.” [\[188\]](#)

The Captain had also made a decision. A decision that would change his destiny and start the process to let love and light into the recesses of his body where they have been absent for far too long. The high spirit, who not only read his thoughts, but also detected a physical transformation.

In the spirit realm, we are our thoughts. Souls in the Lower Zone are misshapen, because their thoughts are misshapen. Their bodies take on the aspect of their thinking. When the Captain decided to make a leap of faith and help the high spirits, his personality, which forms the ideas and thoughts within his brain, began to recast. His mind raced about the probabilities of the Chief of the city defeating the high spirits and taking him to an even worse situation than before, mixed with a yearning to break the bonds of anger and hate.

His personality, by the stimuli of great suffering and anguish was growing in kindness. While he fervently desired to break free, he also wanted others to be free. That new thought, that instinct of justice, caused his outward appearance to take on a new shape. He did not realize it, but the high spirit did.

The process works in the other way too. Dominate thoughts from other spirits can influence a spirit to alter their thinking and shape. In the book *Liberation*, there is a scene, witnessed by the spirit Andre Luiz, where a woman is on trial in a courtroom in hell. The judge, a former Catholic Pope who rejected heaven because he wasn't honored there according to his desires, descended to the Dark Abyss to become a magistrate of the recently passed who appeared in his dark domain.

He pointed to a woman in the waiting docket and bellowed:

“Come here! Come here!”

Looking hypnotized, the poor wretch obeyed the order, emerged from the crowd and placed herself under the forceful rays of his attention.

‘Confess! Confess!’ ordered the ruthless judge, aware of the fragile and passive being he was addressing.

The poor woman smote her breast, as if reciting the Confiteor, and cried out in sorrow:

‘Forgive me! Forgive me, O my God!’

As if under the power of some mysterious drug that made her expose her innermost self to all of us, she spoke in a loud, halting voice:

‘I killed four innocent little children ... and I hired the murder of my unbearable husband ... But my crime is a living monster. It persecuted me while I was in the physical body ... I tried to run from it by every means possible, but it was useless ... and the more I tried to drown my wretchedness in ‘drinking for pleasure,’ the more I wallowed ... in the mire of my own self.’

Suddenly, appearing to experience the interference of loathsome memories, she clamored:

‘I want wine! Wine! Pleasure!’

In a forceful demonstration of power, the judge stated triumphantly:

‘How can prayers and tears liberate such a human beast?’

Then, fixing the radiations from his fearsome look on her, he proclaimed peremptorily:

‘She has condemned herself! She is nothing but a she-wolf, a wolf, a wolf...’

As he repeated those words, as if trying to persuade her to feel like an animal, I saw the deeply impressionable woman’s face begin to change. Her mouth twisted, the neck curved spontaneously forward, and her eyes changed in their sockets. Her face took on a wolf-like look.

In that display of power, I was obviously witnessing the effect of hypnotism on her perispiritual body.

Gubio explained in a whisper:

‘Remorse is, of course, a blessing that leads us to make amends, but it is also a breach through which one’s creditor’s demands payment. Hardness congeals our sensibility for a certain amount of time; and yet, a time always comes when remorse opens our mental life to the jolts of our own emissions coming back to us.’” [\[189\]](#)

Gubio, the good spirit who was the leader of the expedition to the Dark Abyss, explained to Andre Luiz, that the murderous woman, would one day find her way back to redemption. While for the time being, until she found the strength to repair herself, she would appear misshapen to all who viewed her.

Freeing the Prisoners

While the remaining doors were being unlocked, the high spirits, stood in a group, in the central chamber, where the tunnels of the mine intersected. They began to sing. They sang in a tone and style not known to those poor slaves in the dark damp mine.

The theme of the song was the misuse of power in the Lower Zone and how that attitude permeated throughout the land – affected tress, vegetation, and even the very air they breathed. That corruption of the mind causes the corruption of the entire environment.

The ears of the suffering workers perked up and they started listening to this alien music. The message touched something in their hearts.

Then the group switched to a more joyous message. They caroled about the beauties of the earth – the sweet water and snow-capped mountains. They sang of the love of God and the overriding beauty of his creation for those who accept love in their heart.

Next they chorused about heaven and the wonderful expanse of new colors and beauty which awaited them. All made ready by Christ, who loved each and every one of the tired downtrodden workers.

The group of high spirits, fifteen in number, with a leader and two sections of seven, kept singing as the slaves left their posts and climbed toward the glorious sound. The vast empty chamber was filling fast. The paths on the walls were lined with forlorn souls who looked with longing upon the singing spirits. When, at last one brave slave came forward and kneeled before them and said, “Amen.”

Slaves gathered around the group of bright loving angels. The leader spoke to them:

“And you, my brothers, come your ways into the city, and heed none who shall threaten you with the displeasure of the Chief. For he is your lord no longer, but you shall learn the service of a brighter Lord, and wear his livery anon when you have progressed to be so worthy. But now have not any fear, except to mark our word and to obey, for the Chief of this place comes, and we must reckon first with him before your way hence shall be clear.” [\[190\]](#)

Presently the Lord of the land appeared. He towered over the others, by more than half again the height of his minions. His shoulders were not straight but bent. He wore a rusty gold tunic with a sword at his side. He displayed a caricature of royalty. He radiated all of the baser emotions – hate, envy, revenge, lust, and evil.

The leader of the group describes what happened next:

“So he stood there, the King unquestioned of all that rabble, and there were thousands of them who crowded behind him on either side. But around him was left a space – they came not too near his arm. His left hand held a heavy, cruel-looking whip with many lashes, and on this their eyes would often glance and glance away again as quickly. But he hesitated now to speak, the while we stood to silence, for he was only used for a long time past to speak with authority and in the manner of a bully, and he lacked courage to speak to us now he saw us, for we were of aspect restless and at variance with the whole fearful, trembling attitude of all those others in that place. But while we waited, facing the others, I noticed behind him there was a man bound and held by two in the livery of the guards we had met at the Principal Gate. I looked with more care now, for he was in the shadows, and so I made him out to be our guide, the Captain. This seeing, I at once stepped forward very quickly, and as I went by the Chief, I touched the blade of his sword in passing, and then stood before those who held the bound man and commanded them. ‘Loose that man of his things and set him forward towards our company.’

At these words a yell of rage broke from the Chief and he tried to raise his sword upon me. But all the temper had left the blade, and it hung down limp as a water-weed, he staring in horror at it while, for he took it at once as a token of his authority bereft of power. I had not in mind to make him a stock for laughter, but the others, his slaves, saw the comic element in his plight, not of humor but of malice, and from hidden places there came gusts of laughter and mockery. Then the blade withered and fell from the haft all rotten, and the haft he hurled at a point up among the rocks where someone laughed longer than his fellows. Then I turned to the guard again, and they hastily unbound the prisoner and set him before us.

Immediately the Chief threw off his air of mock-majesty, and bowed courteously to me and then to my company. Truly this man is destined in ages to come to be a great servant of our Father when his evil shall have turned to good.

‘Sir,’ he said, ‘you have the freedom, it seems, of a power greater than my own. To it I bow, and would know your will with me and with these my servants who serve me so willingly and so well.’ For all his great command of self, he could not but discover, here and there, his inmost spirit of cynical malice. It is ever thus in those hell-regions; all is counterfeit – except slavery.

I told him of our mission, and he said, ‘I had not known your estate, or else had I welcomed you more fittingly. But, having been remiss, I will now be forward. Follow, and I will myself be guide to you to the Gates of this my City. Follow me, gentlemen, the while I go to lead the way.’

And so we went after him, and passed through the eaves and workings, and came at last to the smaller gate which gave on to the steps which led to the trap through which we had come into the mines.” [\[191\]](#)

The power of a higher spirit over a lower spirit is absolute. Whatever weapon the evil Lord thought he possessed meant nothing to the leader of the spirits. The battle wasn’t even in question. It is as if a troop of soldiers, with pikes, encountered a lone man with a machine gun. One series of rounds fired into the air would send the hapless soldiers scrambling.

But the most startling aspect of the narrative above is the comment by the high spirit about the cruel Lord ... that this pile of evil could one day become great in the service of God. That sentiment speaks volume about what the spirit world wants from us.

Retiring to a cloister and passively spending time in constant prayer is not what Jesus and God expects of us. We are supposed to be aggressive in our pursuit of good. To be able to marshal forces of light and love to perform heroic feats. When Jesus told us the meek shall inherit the earth, He didn’t mean the weak and submissive, he meant acting with force of character, but in the most polite and civilized manner possible – just like the high spirit did with the Chief of the City.

The high spirit didn't yell, he didn't kill, he did something much more effective – he demonstrated his power and gave concise directions, while attempting to allow his opponent to keep his dignity. That is the power of meekness – force with courtesy and understanding.

Out of the Mines

The hundreds that had gathered in that dark tomb followed the high spirits, as they walked behind the Chief toward the entrance to the mines. Soon the crowd grew to the thousands. As they first broke out into the dim light into open country, the high spirits waited by the door to make sure all who wanted to exited the mine.

The leader of the high spirits took the Captain aside and told him of his plans. The Captain then mixed into the crowd so he could reinforce the directives of their saviors.

As the last of the pitiful miners emerged, the leader spoke to them:

“I told them that they should separate themselves each from the others and go through the City into those houses and dens which best they knew, and best were known, and tell the news and bring forth those who would come with them to the square of the Principal Gate where we would meet with them. So they began to leave us, and, as they went the Chief addressed himself to us, ‘If it pleases you gentlemen, who have honored us with your coming among us, I would have you consort with me to my house, while these go to gather their friends. It may chance there will blessing ensue to my household also from your presence.’

‘Blessing indeed shall come to you and your house of this visit of ours,’ I replied to him, ‘but that will be not at the time, nor in the manner you look for,’ so we went with him and he led the way.” [\[192\]](#)

The misshapen Chief led them through the city to his castle. The building covered an entire block and seemed to be more of a prison than an abode. The high spirits followed the Chief into the castle:

“We went within, and he led the way along passages and halls, and at last we came to a chamber, not very large, and there he bade us wait while he made our welcome ready. So he departed, and I smiled upon

my friends and asked them, if they has fathomed the dim depths of his purpose. They were doubtful, most of them, but a few there were who felt a sense of having been deceived, so I told them we were prisoners, fast as he could make us, and when one went to the door through which we had entered he found it fast enough, bolted without. There was another on the other side of the room, which was a kind of ante-chamber to that Throne Room beyond. That also was fast bolted. You of earth would think that some at least of those fourteen would be fearful, or hurt at such a pass as this. But you must know that only those are sent on such missions as this of ours, and into regions such as these, who by long training have become strangers quite to fear, and who are strong to wield the almighty power of good, with skill so unflinching and sure, no evil can withstand it and go scathless.

We know what we should do without counsel or discourse, so we took hands one of another and lifted ourselves toward the light and life of our normal environment. This more gross condition we had taken upon us that we might traffic in those regions in the guise of the inhabitants who lived in them. But, as we aspired together, our condition gradually changed, and our bodies took on a nature more sublimated, so we passed hence without those walls, and stood in the square before the Principal Gate, awaiting the coming of our company.” [\[193\]](#)

Hence, the group of fifteen high spirits simply made themselves less dense, back to their original ratio of matter to energy and walked through the walls of the castle to freedom.

The dark Lord of the city had gathered his retainers in the Throne Room, ready to welcome the prisoners. When the bolted door was opened and no high spirit stood, his court laughed at him while he dissolved in defeat. Such is life in an environment of cruelty. Every weakness is ridiculed and whenever an opportunity to demean another presents itself, is never missed.

The New Colony

The group of high spirits assembled the multitude of souls seeking a better way of life in the square. There they waited for the next phase – their journey to freedom.

A spirit arrived at the City, he led all of the newly freed people to a new location, some distance from the City of the Mines. The population who escaped from their old bonds were 144,000, a number that is significant, but in which manner was not yet known to the high spirits.

G. Vale Owen communicates to us what the leader of the high spirits told him about the significance of that number, in response to his question:

“It came to pass in the counsels of those who conceived that enterprise; spheres far above mine they be, and their reason is not known to me; but it has relation to future ages of progress. You are wondering whether the number has anything in contact with those of John’s redeemed. No, not explicitly, at least. Implicitly there is a reason. That reason will work out in future development of that company, who will form of themselves hereafter a new and self-contained – what shall I say so you will understand me? – department in the Heavens. Not a new Heaven, no, but a new heavenly department; so.” [\[194\]](#)

The group that rescued the souls are high spirits to us, but there are more exulted levels which sends down commands. From our vantage point, peering into the levels of heaven, as if through a veil of heavy cloth, we can only see hints of what actually occurs. Hence, as a child sees their parent, who appears to be a huge creature from their vantage point, spirits higher in the hierarchy seem like brilliant and magical angels. Nevertheless, we must keep in mind there are many levels above them. And they have told us this is so.

Hence, the spirits were sent on a mission, they knew their immediate goal, but didn’t understand the ultimate destination or reason for the huge escape of so many lower spirits. Unlike we here on earth, who question orders from above, dissect them, and usually find them to be full of folly. In the spirit universe orders from beyond have trickled down from God, and are part of an overall plan that could span millions, if not billions of years. Through experience, higher spirits, while questioning the reason for their tasks, most often later realize the supreme wisdom of what they had done.

The leader of the spirit group later visited the new city. He found the leader of the new city, whom he called Barnabas, to be a most loving person, but lacking a drive for organization. This was soon rectified, by the

organizational abilities of the Captain of the Guard who greatly assisted the spirits when they first entered the City of the Mines.

Barnabas, who's loving presence was a guide to the inhabitants to begin to open their hearts to love and real friendship, in concert with the Captain, have enabled the new city to prosper. But given the location of the city in the Lower Zone, the city has not been without peril.

The Reverend G. Vale Owen wished to know if the city had been attacked. This is a logical question, since the city was founded some distance away from the City of the Mines and was still in the Lower Zone. Keep in mind the Lower Zone (also called Umbral in Portuguese) is where souls live who have not yet ascended to heaven, therefore they have not let themselves be free of material bonds and the lesser emotions. While on earth, we have a mix, whereby good people with loving and charitable intentions act as a governor on the pure selfishness that others may wish to openly demonstrate, in the Lower Zones, envy, pride, and hate are the norm.

The spirits told him what had occurred:

“At first they were much hindered and much vexed by surrounding tribes, who came, and finding what was on hand there in their midst, snarled insults at the people and departed. But they reported to other tribes, and many an assault was made on parties of workers as opportunity was found. Then these minor attacks ceased for a long period. But the Captain was ever regaining his one-time alertness and ability, and had his watchers posted on outlying hillocks and in watch-houses all round. And from these he knew that a battle was impending, for the tribes were gathering a large army, and drilling their soldiers, with much display and talk of glory, as their manners go in those regions of false-reality so to group words.

But all the time our people grew in strength and also in brightness, and when the attack came they were able to beat off their foemen. It was a long and very bitter battle of forces and wills. But they won, as they were bound by their destiny to win, what, strange as it many sound to you, and a paradox was a real and strenuous fight. What helped them greatly was their increased luster of person and atmosphere. This was very painful to their adversaries, who were still immersed in their darker condition, and they cried out in agonized frenzy when they came

within the radius and felt the sting of the unresponsive aura of that City and Colony of progressive people.” [\[195\]](#)

Attacks, armies, systems of defenses, and training troops – doesn't that all sound utterly fantastic to exist in a different plane? This is the reality of the spirit universe. It is layered in what is best to teach and train every type of spirit. For those who have accepted the light, a tranquil and marvelous set of worlds await, where improvement is met with rewards and advancements. For those whose purpose in life is to take advantage of their brethren, a world of being with others like themselves is fully constructed so they may learn how it is to live with people like themselves.

The description of the Lower Zone, or Umbral is not only found in the spirit communications of G. Vale Owen, but also in the book, *Action and Reaction*. The book was psychographed by Francisco (Chico) C. Xavier, in 1956, thirty-eight years after G. Vale Owen spoke to his group of spirits.

In the book, there is a spirit, Andre Luiz, who relayed a series of books to Chico Xavier, about his life in the Lower Zone and in heaven. Andre Luiz was visiting a small colony, more like a fort, located deep in the Lower Zone. Its purpose was to help those who desired to escape their time in that desolate region. The center's name was “Mansao Paz”, which translates into “Mansion of Peace”.

Andre describes the weapons that defended the small colony, as a series of metallic poles which are charged to repel any attacks. Andre witnesses one such attack and asks:

“Are we being attacked by an army?” I asked, intrigued.

“Yes, we are,” Druso confirmed calmly. “These attacks are common, however. Our unfortunate brothers are trying to force us to move our building and render us powerless so that they can take over the region.”

[\[196\]](#)

The attackers were equipped with canons that discharged harmful vibrations that would cause terror and madness, if it wasn't for the defenses of the fort. The presence of cannons, which are capable of spreading fear, indicates a sophisticated supply chain. Hence there must be collectives within the Lower Zone which can manufacture weapons and probably other

goods. Weapons that could have taken their origin from the City of the Mines.

The new city, ably led by Barnabas and the Captain, was also attacked. Whereas, they didn't have the sophisticated equipment that an outpost from heaven would have, they did have the advantage of a superior spirituality.

On earth, this would mean very little in the face of hard steel, but in the spirit world, faith in goodness and redemption fortifies one for whatever is thrown at them. Love acts as a shield and as a beacon that can either attract those in harmony or repel those who feel the pain of their own retarded existence and regrets.

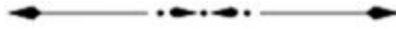
The City Ascends

The Law of Affinity places spirits with like spirits; it also affects a colony of like-minded spirits. As the people of the new city elevate themselves so does their abode. The spirit leader explains the process, in his description of the history of the colony:

“Improvement has still proceeded, and, in ratio to their increasing brightness, the Colony has been gradually removed from its original state and has approached the spheres of light. And so I come upon a principle of interrelation between state and place obtaining here in these realms, and which you may find it hard to understand – nay, impossible. So I will not enlarge on it, I will say their enemies found it harder to come near them, while the Colonists found that every time a trail of approach was made the radius of their City's immunity from danger had increased and still continued to increase, and their enemies perforce stopped in their tracks farther and farther away.” [\[197\]](#)

Nothing can explain the plasticity of the spirit realm better than the example of a whole colony slowly elevating to the level of their collective spirituality. The spirit realm, created by God and before our physical universe, exists and is governed by a set of Divine Laws – more aptly described as Divine Programming. Where, everything in the spirit realm, and in our universe, is created, maintained, and modified by force of will. Either directly by God, or his coterie of high spirits, who implement His commands.

The spirit realm, reacts to forces, spiritual in nature that can alter one reality to another. As one rises in brightness, new powers are in play, active and passive, which dictates location of residence, span of travel, and relative strength. Spirit luminesce attracts new attributes, and new applications are then added to our individual personality. Thereby creating, an enhanced spirit, but with the same character and memories.



Chapter 41 – Spiritual Force

What do you say about a world that can be changed by thought? Spirits who have ascended, gained wisdom, love, and power have God-like capabilities ... which are always used for good, for nurturing, for edifying purposes.

And yet the world seems normal. Love is everywhere in heaven. People go about their duties calmly and happily, all the while, high spirits with enormous power constantly travel through many levels.

Only the absolute perfection of God could have created an environment of quasi-unlimited potential for each and every person, yet still maintain an orderly and pleasing atmosphere.

As documented in the chapters above, high spirits possess more capabilities the greater they ascend. They become a greater ratio of energy to matter. As their energy increases so does their ability to accumulate superior talents and tools which facilitate their effectiveness in anything they do. They are more in tune with the Universal Cloud – that which contains all data from all time from all universes.

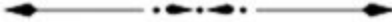
In essence, a spirit Lord, is omnipotent in our eyes. In the literature of G. Vale Owen, Francisco C. Xavier, or even in messages during medium meetings I have attended – when an order comes down from Christ – it is treated as error free. It is not questioned, because it must be perfect – even if it doesn't quite make sense to the angels carrying it out at the time.

Eventually, what was commanded, after the scenario played out, made perfect sense. The occurrence of being right time after time by high Angels provides the background for the absolute faith by their wards.

Possessing this much authority means great and terrible responsibility for others. Wielding power is not easy, any decision will have benefits and disadvantages. Every detail must be thought out and every action weighed.

This is why, we must learn to equally ponder each and every decision we make. Now is the time to start rehearsing for absolute power. Now is the time to consider oneself to be omnipotent and all-powerful – and act with mercy and judgement accordingly.

The more we train ourselves to use what little force we have at our disposal now, the better prepared we shall be when we have real power.



Section 5 – Knowledge of the Universe(§)

Spirits who have communicated to Spiritist mediums have not sent concrete scientific facts to us on earth. High spirits understand that is not their job – discovery of the natural laws of our universe is our task. But, they do allude to processes and features of the spirit universe at large.

The hints that are thrown our way are enough to please any explorer. Like the birds that Columbus' men searched the seas to find to determine if land was near; we are given information to spur us onwards.

Humans have always been intellectually curious - we are programmed that way. Those who are not inquisitive don't make good candidates for advancement. Therefore, breadcrumbs are thrown in our path, with the hope we follow the trail.

Unbeknownst to scientists, they are performing the work of the spirit realm. Whereas, many profess a disbelief in another world, they are working toward the day when the existence of a spirit domain is proven. Spiritism is inflexible on that point.

Like the plethora of new gadgets spurred on by the old Star Trek series, such as the mobile phone, the tricorder, and others – information, partially described, will cause some curiosity at some point. Setting events in motion to culminate in exactly what the spirit realm wanted.

We are being pushed toward greatly expanding our base of knowledge. All of this is in preparation for our becoming a planet of regeneration.

Currently we live on a planet of atonement, where we live life after life in paying off debts from previous lives. Once the earth has a majority of souls who practice love, charity, fraternity, and honest dealings with all – we shall begin the last phase of transformation into a planet of regeneration.

On a planet of regeneration, the baser emotions of hate, envy, revenge, and selfishness are practically erased, leading to an environment of tranquility and support of all by all. Our physical lives will be dedicated to exploring avenues of new experiences and responsibilities, as opposed to suffering through trials to teach us what we should not have done in a

previous life. The earth will finally arrive at the paradise that so many have wished for so long.



Chapter 42 – To Rise in Heaven isn't a Journey, it's a Transformation

A colony on the third level of heaven had grown in wisdom and spirituality. The leaders and citizens were to be ushered into a superior sphere, where their learning would take on new heights. But they didn't travel to a new location ... the entire colony and surrounding area was altered – transformed from one dimension to another.

The process whereby this was done will be similar to when the earth rises from a planet of atonement to a superior level – a planet of regeneration. The fact that we live in a densely packed multi-dimensional multi-universe means that we simply plugged into a different set of vibrations, harmonies, data, densities, ratio of matter to energy – all and more – to move from one plane to another. Exactly how this occurs; what are the actual mechanics is a mystery.

But the ability to exist in one dimension or another, just by dialing back or forward certain physical and mental variables explains why people see phantoms, near death experiences, that spirits exist all around us ... and the resurrection of Christ.

The high spirit Arnel told the [Rev. G. Vale Owen](#), how an entire colony moved up one sphere while remaining in place. The colony was started by the survivors of a religious massacre. The high spirit Shonar brought them together to wake from the dead and asked Wulfhere and others to try to convince them to forgo their desire for revenge and seek spiritual substance instead. Some of the original group, mostly the wives and children were able to immediately grasp the need to release their primitive urges to avenge their death – these were already in sphere four – awaiting their brethren to join them.

Those who remained, fighting their baser instincts, made great strides under the governance of their Bishop and leaders. They had been given help from high spirits and watched over for any sign of assistance they may have needed. Eventually, they were judged fit to ascend.

First, the citizens were gathered in a great hall, which served as the spiritual and civil center for the community. Next the leaders of the city invited the high spirits, Wulfhere and Arnel to walk down the main aisle and address the multitude. Meanwhile, outside the transformation was completed by high spirits. The crowd was about to receive a great surprise. Arnel tells us what happened:

“Wulfhere spoke to them. She said, ‘I am happy today, good people, because what my lord Shonar began, by high grace we have so far completed. You have striven well and have won through. You have, by slow degrees, so progressed as to merit advancement into the sphere next in order. Since you came here within this House, unknown to you this transmutation has been brought upon you, and now you are within Sphere Four.’

‘Be quiet in your minds for the time, good people, and at the proper moment you shall join with your loved ones and your friends and your children whom you so long have striven to find.’

Then she and I and our company formed in circle, facing outward; but the circle was not finished, there was a gap in the platform. Seeing what was toward, the dear youth Habdi came and joined us, and, taking my hand in his own, expressed his love to me and his thanks on behalf of the people who had become in a way his own.

As we stood there, silent and intent upon our business, the walls became less dense of substance until at last they were translucent, and then invisible altogether. The open country was before the multitude, and they saw a beautiful meadowland and trees and flowers and fountains of water which had not been there when they had enter that House.

But they were sore perplexed. So I addressed them and told them that the country around the Guild House was all changed now, and that they should go forth questing, for they were in the country where dwelt their own people whom they sought; and others also who had become friends to those, and would so become to the present assembly.” [\[198\]](#)

Imagine, entering a great hall, sitting down, then a bright angel tells you to stand up and peer outside. But all you see are walls. Slowly the opaque

barriers become translucent and you see the countryside around you. You think this must be an illusion, because the surroundings are not what they were when you walked into the great center. Then you were told that all of you had been transformed, including the city you lived in. That now, you exist on a higher, a more glorious level.

This too shall be the process the earth will travel through in the distant future, when mankind is at harmony with nature and themselves. There won't be a cataclysm ... only a transmutation.

I am not sure if it will happen gradually, like parents watching their child grow over time, where their past childhood is remembered fondly, but the new reality is what the parents are focused on. Or will the human race collectively go to sleep and wake up on a new earth – whatever the method; it will occur – for that is our destiny.

Arnel describes the subsequent actions of the new-found residents on the fourth level of heaven:

“When the walls were once more materialized the multitude streamed forth without. Here they paused to see what changed aspect was upon the place. To their eyes, accustomed to the somewhat subdued light of the Sphere Three this was indeed a Paradise of brightness. The trees and flowers and grass were of a much brighter hue, and the light more mellow. Nor was there any desert land to be seen, for the forest filled the horizon on every hand with a rich curtain of colors. But nowhere was the party to be found for which they sought. So they went forth and entered the forest paths on every hand. They did not pause to consider which was the direction in which they should go. They did not see the company of those who had come from the higher spheres to guide them. But, one and another, they found their friends and were well content. Thus a widespread colony grew up there.” [\[199\]](#)

Will this be our fate in some future life? Those of us who have worked to balance spirituality and materialism, striving to replace our primitive emotions with uplifting feelings of love, charity, and fraternity – will we go out the door and see a brighter earth? With flora shining in colors we haven't perceived before? I believe the day will come ... it may not arrive as fast as we desire; but seldom anything does – but that day will dawn and

then we shall be able to look back and know that all of our trials were worth it.

The Process of Transmutation

Arnel didn't just detail the new landscape for G. Vale Owen, he also explained the process, as well as he could to a Church of England Reverend residing in the early 1900s:

“The change which had come upon these people had not been of so sudden a nature as might appear from my narration. It had been long in preparing. They, by their endeavors, and by our teachings, had been advancing towards the estate of Sphere Four for a long time. The Guild House had served as a focus wherein their aspirations had been gathered. Thereon we had directed, in chief, the streams of our powers. Mingling there and blending, this content of higher condition had laved and bathed them as they had gone about their work of building. Unknown to them, except to a few as that priest and the two laymen and some small number else, they had advanced in spiritual uplifting until they were really beyond the Sphere Three in personality, but still resident in it as to their environment apparent to them. The initiation we had brought about within the Guild House was merely the sealing of what already had come about upon them; no more than that.” [\[200\]](#)

The key phrase to consider in what Arnel told G. Vale Owen is “beyond Sphere Three in personality.” The word “personality” is used quite often, not only in the communications by various spirits to G. Vale Owen, but also to other Spiritist mediums. I believe it is the closest definition of what we really are.

We aren't human – that is just a temporary condition. We are spirits – but in identifying an individual spirit, it doesn't denote a uniqueness amongst spirits. Hence, instead of using the term individual, which means one person or one spirit; Arnel and others use the term personality to define a collection of experiences, attributes, characteristics, and level of spirituality.

After all, one can't point out an odd-shaped spirit, or a left-handed spirit, or an extremely intelligent spirit – since all spirits are created equally – literally – all have the same capacity. While one spirit may be superior in

wisdom from another, it is just a matter of time before the lesser spirit catches up or surpasses the other in wisdom. And all can transform their physical appearance to suite their desires. Hence, if they so wished, all spirits could look, act, and talk alike ... the differentiation is solely in what a spirit has accumulated in their long ascent up the spiritual ladder.

Our preoccupation with race, tribe, and homogenous cultures is quite unimportant. Our differences are but part of the lesson plan. They are one more experience and a learning opportunity.

Think about what that means to a spirit peering down at us. It is as if the teachers were watching with amusement the trading of marbles and the discussion of what color and type of marbles were the best amongst the children. It served the purpose of initiating discussion and debate; but on the whole was trivial in the years of schooling ahead.

The collection of personalities, in that colony in sphere three, had the correct vibrations and spiritual maturity to reside in, fit in, and be in affinity with – the other personalities of sphere four. Hence, they were promoted.

Thusly, as a collective, the environment of their old city would be transformed to be in tune with sphere four. Arnel tells us more:

“We did not transfer them from one locality to another.

Now this I find difficult to make clear for you to whom distance is so real a thing. It is not to us as it is to you. You might, as I say to you by way of example, you might be speaking of you and me at this moment as being distant each from other. For you cannot see me, and you hear me only interiorly, as the voice of someone far away. But that is not so. It is merely that your state and my own are dissimilar. Our environment is diverse by reason of our condition being on two different planes of activity. And yet we are not dissimilar in total for, see you, you write what I impress you to write and that could not be except some likeness of nature should be to you and to me, both.

So it was with those people of the Guild House. It was not their residence which was changed locally, but their environment was transmuted about them, and they became, by that transaction, correspondent no longer to the conditions of the Sphere Three, but to those of the Sphere Four.” [\[201\]](#)

It is as if you were a player on a team. One of the best players. Your team wore a jersey of red and white. During the very time you were engaged in contest against another team, who wore blue and yellow jerseys, you were notified of a trade to the other team. The other team was generally known to be of higher caliber. You stayed on the field, took off your red and white shirt and donned the blue and yellow. You – your personality stayed the same – but you changed teams, to a superior team, where you would be a better fit.

The Earth too is being Prepared

The colony on sphere three was transformed, they became associated with another sphere. To the sphere where they had, through long study and work, been promoted to. The gradual progression, resulting in a change of state is also happening, at this very moment, to earth.

In the book *Genesis*, by [Allan Kardec](#), a spirit, Dr. Barry notifies us of earth's planned transformation:

“Yes, indeed, humankind is being transformed just as it has been transformed in other epochs, and each transformation is marked by a turning point, which, for the human species, is what the turning point in growth is for the individual; these crises, frequently painful and dolorous, carry generations and institutions along with them, but are always followed by a phase of material and moral progress.

After nearly a century, earth's humanity has arrived at one of these growth periods and is in the middle of a transformative endeavor; that is why humankind is being shaken on all sides, caught up in a kind of fever as if driven by an invisible power until it is settled on new foundations. Whoever sees it afterwards will find many changes in its customs, its character, its laws and its beliefs; in other words, in its entire societal aspect.” [\[202\]](#)

Just as in the colony, where teachers from higher spheres guided the progression of the inhabitants, our spirit mentors too are guiding the entire human race. Whereas, we may not see them, we can't resist their influence. The spirit Arago, again in *Genesis*, notifies us of the connection and inevitability of the coming transmutation:

“The spirit, due to its contact and inner connections with the physical elements, is also subject to influences that modify its dispositions – although they do not deprive it of free will – and overexcite or attenuate its activity, thereby contributing to its development. The turmoil that sometimes manifests within an entire population among the people of the same race is not a fortuitous event, nor is it the result of a capricious act; its cause lies in the laws of nature. Unconscious at first, this turmoil, which is nothing more than a vague desire, an indefinable yearning for something better, a need for change, is expressed through silent agitation, and then through actions that prepare social revolutions, which, believe it or not, also have their own lifespan, similar to physical revolutions, because everything is connected. If your spirit sight were not limited by the veil of matter, you would see these fluidic currents, which, like thousands of conductor wires, link up the things of the spirit world and the physical world. When you hear that humankind has arrived at a period of transformation and that the earth must ascend within the world hierarchy, do not see anything mystical in these words, but, to the contrary, the fulfillment of one of the great unavoidable laws of the universe, against which all human ill will shall break.” [\[203\]](#)

We, collective humanity of earth, are being taught. And as we gain knowledge through experiences mandated by the spirit realm, our personality is being modified. Our harmony, vibrations, and spiritual feelings are affected. Once a majority of us are in tune with an advance state of being, the earth will be transformed, in place, to stand side by side with other advanced planets.

Transmutation Explains Resurrection

Arnel gave one more example of the density of the spirit universe in which we live. Where all things coexist within the same space, but not the same dimension:

“When Jesus came into the house wherein His friends were gathered on that first Easter, He came unseen. So. Then He gathered from them what substance He had need of, and, by what process you now call materialization. He fashioned Him a body of flesh. Then He was visible to them. Also His environment had become changed. When He had

transacted such business as was His at that time, He dematerialized again that body of flesh and, in that act, He changed His environment once again back to that of spirit. But all through the process, from first to last, presence and absence had no part whatsoever. Both before and after His appearing in bodily form to them He was there unseen. You get me, my son? The change was of condition, and not of locality.” [\[204\]](#)

I believe Jesus visualized the room in which His disciples were gathered. At that thought, he appeared in the room, seeing the men talking. Next he altered his state to one denser, more matter, so his friends could detect his presence – again by the power of His will. After He finished, He returned to His normal state and by the action of another thought came back to the plane in which He had left.

We have only just begun to grasp this concept of the fluidity of existence. The advent of CGI (computer generated imagery) whereby the entire environment is driven by software – created by the thoughts of the creative directors of the movie – is totally flexible. Anything that can be imagined or visualized can be created – albeit in only two dimensions in our physical world.

Whereas, in the spirit realm, reality is created in multiple dimensions. All driven by the power of the will. This is exactly why you, my dear reader and fellow traveler on earth, must survive the bad periods of life ... for they are training missions. Teaching us how to harness our minds in the worst of circumstances.



Chapter 43 – Our Physical World is Actually Created by Thought

In the spirit realm thought is action, thought creates, thought destroys, and thought is the reality. In our physical world, we believe that many discoveries and actions begin with thought, but in parallel with our human thinking, our planet and our universe carries on ruled by natural laws. Natural laws which dictate how stars are formed, planets are created, continents grow and collide, how the weather changes, how our very buildings stand and eventually decay. All unaffected by human minds.

The Spirituality, the Supreme Intelligence, or God (whatever name one wishes to use) thought and the universe was created. Creation by force of will didn't end there. The spirit realm tells us that ideas still control and effect creation in our physical world.

The Spirits Book , by [Allan Kardec](#) , written in the 1850s, [codified](#) the Doctrine of [Spiritism](#) . Spirits transmitted their answers to questions posed by Allan Kardec to various mediums throughout Europe. Only when multiple mediums wrote similar answers to the same question was it entered into *The Spirits Book* .

Jesus promised us the Consoler, the Spirit of Truth to tell us more. Spiritism is that vehicle, the method whereby high spirits communicate to us new information about our purpose on earth and how we migrate from spirit life to earthly life in our quest to improve. We are also presented with the basic tenets of how our entire cosmos was created and operates.

Question 30 in *The Spirits Book* asks the following:

“ 30. *Is matter formed of one element or of several elements?*”

Of one primitive element. The bodies which you regard as simple are not really elementary; they are transformations of the primitive matter.”

[\[205\]](#)

Hence, all matter, organic and inorganic is composed of the same universal fluid. Our current science has postulated the same principle under the name “String Theory”. According to Wikipedia “String Theory” is:

“The starting point for string theory is the idea that the point-like particles of particle physics can also be modeled as one-dimensional objects called strings. String theory describes how strings propagate through space and interact with each other. In a given version of string theory, there is only one kind of string, which may look like a small loop or segment of ordinary string, and it can vibrate in different ways. On distance scales larger than the string scale, a string will look just like an ordinary particle, with its mass, charge, and other properties determined by the vibrational state of the string. In this way, all of the different elementary particles may be viewed as vibrating strings. In string theory, one of the vibrational states of the string gives rise to the graviton, a quantum mechanical particle that carries gravitational force. Thus string theory is a theory of quantum gravity.” [\[206\]](#)

String theory tells us there is no such thing as empty space, strings are everywhere. The same information was supplied in *The Spirits Book* :

“ 36. *Does an absolute void exist in any part of space?*

No, there is no void. What appears like a void to you is occupied by matter in a state which escapes the action of your senses and of your instruments.” [\[207\]](#)

The spirit world told us in the 1850s there is no such thing as an absolute vacuum. There is always something everywhere in our infinite universe.

Spiritist literature also foresaw the advent of the Big Bang Theory. In the book *Genesis – Miracles and Predictions According to Spiritism* , in the section titled “The Universal Creation”, we are told, by spirits, communicating to Allan Kardec in the 1850’s how it all began:

“The primitive cosmic matter contained the material, fluidic and vital elements for all the universes that unroll their magnificence before eternity. It is the fertile mother of all things, the first grandmother, and what is more, the eternal generatrix. This substance from which all the sidereal globes have come has not disappeared; this power is not dead, for it still gives birth incessantly to new creations, and receives incessantly the reconstituted elements of the worlds that have been effaced from the book of eternity.” [\[208\]](#)

The “unrolling” is the filling of our particular physical universe from the primitive element bursting upon the scene, caused by the thought of God, to start the creation cycle. Over billions of years, from the start of a tiny seed, galaxies, solar systems, planets and life began. This one element is used for everything. We are told:

“The ethereal matter, rarified to various degrees, and which is diffused throughout interplanetary space; that cosmic fluid that fills the universe, rarified to various degrees in the immense regions rich in clusters of stars; condensed to various degrees where the stellar sky does not yet shine; modified to various degrees by different combinations according to their locations in the expanse, is nothing more than the primitive substance in which reside the universal forces, from which nature has taken all things.” [\[209\]](#)

Hence, from one element, called “Universal Fluid”, by Spiritists, comes all matter. Gold, silver, water, and iron are made up of the same element. What we see as molecules and atoms (and the building blocks of atoms) which construct molecules are all derivatives of the universal fluid. We are told:

“This fluid penetrates bodies like an immense ocean. In it resides the vital principle that gives rise to the life of beings and perpetuates it on each globe according to its condition, a principle which in its latent state lies dormant as long as no voice calls upon it. By virtue of this universal vital principle, every creature, mineral, plant, animal or other – because there are many other kingdoms of nature whose existence you do not even suspect – knows how to appropriate the conditions for its existence and lifespan.” [\[210\]](#)

This fluid is molded to become whatever it needs to be. It is transformed by thought. When the Spirituality created the universe, He created it by thought to be composed of an element which is able to be formed into many combinations by thought and to follow logical rules, a type of programming the behavior of the object for all eternity, until a superior thought modifies it.

This programming of the object is mentioned in the next paragraph in *Genesis* :

“It is very important to be aware of the idea that the primitive cosmic matter is endowed not only with the laws that ensure the stability of the worlds, but also with the universal vital principle that forms the spontaneous generations on each world to the extent that conditions manifest for the successive existence of beings, and when the hour sounds for the appearing of the children of life during the creation period.” [\[211\]](#)

In summary, in the 1850s Allan Kardec brought to us the concept of a unifying element, that which is the fountainhead of all matter in the universe, which is directed and ruled by thoughts from not only God, but from superior spirits. Spirits, who have been trained to create with their mind.

We are on earth at this moment, surviving our trials, paying for our past debts, gaining new experiences, so one day, we too may be worthy of manipulation of matter by our will.

One may express doubts about the processes presented by spirits to the small group of pioneering Spiritists, first gathered by Allan Kardec, but we shall see that this message has been told thousands of years before Christ; from the Book of Genesis in the Old Testament:

“In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth. The earth was formless and void, and darkness was over the surface of the deep, and the Spirit of God was moving over the surface of the waters.” Genesis 1:2

But from many other religious texts. Most started with an idea, a thought, an intent to create the world. Now, thanks to the Spirit of Truth, as promised by Jesus in the New Testament, Spiritism is revealing more information about the creation of our universe.

In the 20th century, we were given more to ponder.

The Universe Explained

The structure of the physical and spiritual universe is revealed once again in the book, *Life Beyond the Veil*, in *The Lowlands of Heaven* section. The book was psychographed in the early 1900s. It was a communication to

the Rev. G. Vale Owen from Astriel in the spirit world that introduces the basis on which all objects are composed:

“Every star, as you know, is itself a center of a system which comprises in itself not only the planets in revolution round the star, but also the particles of matter which suffuse that system, but are too sublimated to be cognized by any system of chemistry which is possible to those who dwell in physical bodies, and in their research are compelled to use both material instruments and material brains. These particles are between the purely material and spiritual, and indeed may be used both in the physical and the spiritual economies. For the two are merely two of many phases of one progressive economy, and act and react each on the other, like a sun and his planet.” [\[212\]](#)

Astriel is restating the fact, accepted in the spirit realm that everything flows from one source. We were told the same in Allan Kardec’s *Genesis*, in Chapter VI, which was dictated to the Parisian Spiritist Society in 1862 and 1863, by the spirit Galileo. In the beginning of the section entitled “Matter”, he states, “Nevertheless, we can establish as an absolute principle the fact that all substances, known and unknown, no matter how dissimilar they may seem, whether from the inner composition point of view or from the aspect of their reciprocal action, are in fact nothing more than varieties into which it is transformed under the direction of the innumerable forces that govern it.” [\[213\]](#)

Astriel is making it clear that not only is our physical universe composed of Universal Fluid, but the spiritual realm is also made of variations of the prime element. Next, Astriel exposes how the transformation of the primary elements are accomplished and some of its properties:

“Gravitation is applicable to these particles also on both sides, and it is by means of this force – as we will call it, as being a name you know, and also very little understood – that we cohere these particles together and are able, from time to time, so to clothe our spiritual bodies as to become visible to the photographic plate, and sometimes to the human eye. But we do more than this, and over a wider range. Were it not for these particles all space would be dark; that is, no light would be able to be transmitted from planet or sun or star to earth; for it is because of

the reflection and refraction of these that the rays are visible. Not that they are transmitted, for their transmission and passage depend on other elements of which we will now say no more than this; It is not the rays of light, nor is it the so-called light-waves which are visible to the human eye, but their action on these minute particles which, on the impact of these rays, become visible as waves.” [\[214\]](#)

As String Theory postulates that strings interact with each other and vibrate in different states, a high order spirit has hinted at a similar process. Light doesn't travel in a beam, but flows like a wave across a tapestry composed of countless threads, acting and reacting to each other. As the threads vibrate their intensity is revealed and we can see the pattern of the carpet.

Astriel notifies Vale Owen that the spirit world doesn't wish to supply humankind with the answers, since the effort to advance scientifically is part of our collective endeavor. But, they will give us hints as to what are possibilities of further research. With this in mind, Astriel explains the basic underlying theme of our existence:

“The stars, then send forth their light. But in order to send it forth they must first possess it themselves. And as they are not self-constituted personalities, in order that they may have it they must be given it. Who does this, and how it is done?” [\[215\]](#)

“As they are not self-constituted personalities” is the key concept to grasp. When Astriel speaks about the stars, powerful suns which generate immense energy, he implies that since they aren't distinct intelligent beings they don't possess actual power, they are only channels for power. In our life we playfully give personalities to inanimate objects, we personify that which we believe could represent human-like behavior. Children's cartoons exemplify this, such as the sun talking or the ocean inviting a child to swim.

What Astriel is saying is that behind these, what we believe, are purely natural objects, that operate via the Laws of Physics, are actual operators who have personally determined the operation of the object. Astriel now reveals the full extent of the power of the spirit realm:

“Now, of course, it is easy to answer ‘God, for He is the Source of everything.’ That is true enough, but, as you know, He employs His

ministers, and these are without number, and each unit with an allotted task.

The stars receive their power of transmitting light from the presence of myriads of spiritual being about them, all ordered and regulated in their spheres, and all working in conjunction. These have the stars in their charge, and it is from them that the energy proceeds which enables the star to do its appointed work.” [\[216\]](#)

Let us think about what Astriel has said. There is an intelligent being behind the workings of the universe. Pulling levers, starting and stopping, regulating, and measuring what we see as the natural evolution of the cosmos. It is as if the mythology of the ancients came back to life, and Apollo’s chariot really did bring the sun out every morning.

Have we regressed into time-worn superstitions? No, for the spirits have told us that human advancement is like a spiral, not a straight line. That we must go through a materialistic phase, which de-emphasizes spirituality, in order to accomplish the scientific discoveries required to return to a balance between materialism and spirituality.

The spirit world has determined that we are ready to re-learn certain truths. That we are connected, at a deeper level than most of us could comprehend, to the spirit realm. That our ties to the earth, to wealth are but temporary achievements. Our real goal is to better ourselves, to be prepared to take up the job of running the universe.

If we didn’t get the message at first, Astriel explains the true operation of our environment:

“What we want you to understand is that there is no such thing as blind or unconscious force in all God’s Kingdom of Creation. Not a ray of light, not an impulse of heat, not an electrical wave proceeds from your sun, or any other star, but is the effect of a cause, and that cause is a conscious cause; it is the Will of some conscious being energizing in a certain and positive direction. These beings are of many grades and many species. They are not all the same order, nor all of the same form. But their work is controlled by those above them, and these are controlled by powers of higher grade and sublimity still.” [\[217\]](#)

In effect, we live in a universe, a solar system, a planet that is not only inorganic balls of fire and lifeless rock, for these are what we see. We can only detect the outside machinery, we can't see the workers behind the curtain, the massive effort to run, calibrate, and measure the output of the cosmos.

In addition, we are incapable of deciphering the different types of beings which contribute to our welfare. Whatever our imagination supplies probably falls short of the reality. Astriel attempts to pull the curtain back, so we may catch a glimpse of the legion that works for our benefit.

“And so these great balls of matter, whether gaseous or liquid or solid, whither star or comet or planet, are all held together, and their forces energized and given effect not by the operation of some mechanical law, but by conscious live beings at the back of, and working through, those laws. We use the word ‘conscious’ in preference of ‘intelligent’, because the latter term would not accurately describe all the ministers of the Creator. As you understand the word, indeed, it would describe only a very limited number. And it may surprise you to know that those to whom you would apply the term are those which stand between the lower and the higher. For while the lower workers are not really beings of intelligence, the higher are more sublime than the term would imply.” [\[218\]](#)

Hence, the higher the level the more connected you are to God, as to finally discard your human form and become one with the Supreme Intelligence. Where there is no delineation between male and female, race, nor any other measure that we are so fond of, only an unimaginable will. A force so omnipotent that it approaches the One Who Created All.

Astriel ties it all together to demonstrate to us how all of what he has presented affects our daily life:

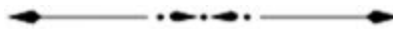
“Now you will, from what we have already written, be able to see how intimate is the relationship between spirit and matter, and when the other evening we spoke of your own church building and the allotting of guardians and workers, among other things, for the care of the material edifice, we were only telling you of the same principle at work on a minute scale. Nevertheless it is the same principle exactly. The scheme which provides for the upkeep of all those millions of suns and

of their planets took note also of the rearrangement of certain congeries of atoms – some in the form of stone, others wood or brick – which resulted in that new entity you call a church. These are held together, each atom in its place, by the outflowing power of will. They are not placed there and left solitary. Were this done the building would soon crumble away and fall to pieces.

And now, in the light of what we have written, think of what people call ‘the difference of feeling’ on entering a church, or a theatre, or a dwelling house, or any building. Each has its own suitable emanations, and these are in consequence of this same principle at work which we have tried to describe. It is spirit speaking to spirit – the spirits of the discarnate workers speaking, through the medium of the material particles and their arrangement and purpose, to the spirits of those who enter that place.” [\[219\]](#)

All that is made is alive in the wishes of those who created it, whether by incarnates or discarnates in spirit form. Our feelings are more rooted in reality that we give them credit for. When we gaze upon a building that speaks to our inner soul, we are connecting with the other side. We are experiencing a harmony, an affinity with the inclinations of the spirit realm.

This is why beauty is universal. A trait understood by the Greeks before the time of Socrates. The mathematics of the symmetry of the object and the care in which it was fashioned hits us on a subconscious level. For only through our spirit feelings can we momentarily connect with the life we will return to, after our physical bodies have completed their set of trials on earth.



Chapter 44 – Diversity Exists Because God Gave

Us Freewill

We are told diversity exists in the animal kingdom because of the process of evolution. Diversity exists in our solar system and the universe in general because of natural laws that govern our environment. Diversity happens because of organic progressions, happenstance, and a myriad of other factors which, as of yet, are difficult to be quantified.

All of this appears logical on the surface. But there is an underlying reason why planets are formed differently, animals evolve along a certain path, and why some suns are hotter than others.

This is because the universe wasn't just a random occurrence, a big bang without reason. Our universe was created in a precise manner to unleash the creative abilities of spirits. Of spirits who started out as young immature spirits, just like us.

In the previous chapter I wrote how the universe was created by thought. The original thought was by God, but as creation persisted, other realms; galaxies, solar systems et al, were formed by the minions of the Divine Intelligence.

The true underlying cause of diversity is revealed in the book, *Life Beyond the Veil*, in *The Lowlands of Heaven* section. The book was compiled in the 1920s. It was a communication to the Rev. G. Vale Owen from Astriel in the spirit world that introduces the foundation of variety within our universe:

“The heavenly bodies are the expression in matter of ideas originating among those high in the Heavenly Spheres of Creative Power. They are all and each the effect of thoughts and impulses proceeding from those spheres. When a world is in process of creation those High Beings are constantly energizing, and projecting into the forming matter their spiritual influence and, so to speak, character. Thus, although the planets of your system are all conformable to one great scheme of unity, they are diverse in their individual characteristics. These characteristics answer to the characters of the Great Lords in Whose

charge they severally are. Astronomers are correct when they say that certain of the elements which go to form the earth are found in, say, Mars and Jupiter, and in the Sun itself. But they would err if they should say that they are found in the same proportion, or in similar combination. Every planet differs in scheme which governs them as a system. What is here said of the units which go to make up the Solar system may be applied to the wider range of things. Considering the Solar realm as a unit, it is not identical, either in composition of elements or to planetary constitution, with other systems. Each differs from its fellow also.” [\[220\]](#)

The Great Lords are those spirits who have traveled up the long ladder of improvement. They, at one time or another have experienced each of the stages of reincarnation on [different types of planets](#). While we are only on the second stage, earth is a planet of atonement, where we pay for our past wrongs, in order to learn to follow the path of love, charity, and fraternity; the Great Lords have traversed the entire reincarnation process to become pure spirits. No longer do they need to don a physical form. The Great Lords know God in a way in which we are incapable of comprehending.

God didn't create the universe to be a uniform structure, with robot like beings all obediently following the same path and responding to the same stimuli in the exact same manner. He knew that a universe without individual choice would have all of the variety of an ant colony. Hence the Supreme Intelligence endowed us with freewill.

Freewill – We have to Learn to Control It

There is a price to be paid for free will. Free will is the cause of all injustice and cruelty on earth. For we are allowed to discover for ourselves the pain and heartache that is caused by our wrongful deeds. This is the purpose of reincarnation.

This is why we live on a planet of atonement, which is the equivalent of a middle or junior high school, where the main goal of the teachers and administrators is to get the unruly and hormonal teenagers pass a tumultuous phase. Whereas, for our vulnerable young the transition period only lasts two to three years, for the collective human race, our track to acquire the necessary attitudes and skills to be civilized toward each other,

started around the rise of the first civilizations and is continuing today. If one begins at the ancient Mesopotamian civilization, around 6500 BC until today, it is a span of over 8,500 years. Although we have been told that previous earthly cultures, such as Atlantis, existed before and were destroyed, due to the fact that the level of the human race's technology outpaced their spirituality.

A cynic might very well say that our primary advancement is the ability to destroy each other more effectively, which is witty and true. But, there is more, where once there was no constraint on our inhumanity toward each other, for example the world wide acceptance of slavery, torture, and wars, there is now a consensus against such practices.

There is advancement. One must look beyond one lifetime. In our own field of vision we see disaster around every corner. But, upon reflection over hundreds of years, one can detect a slow, almost glacial, pace forward.

The spirit world tells us that the growth of mankind will not be a straight upward sloping line, but rather an upward spiral. Where great wars, catastrophes, and other cataclysmic events may seemingly hurl our progress back a step or two, but we are then positioned to acquire the collective lessons we so sorely require.

An example of this is the dark ages. Rome was founded at the urging of the Spirit world. The spirit Emmanuel, who was the spirit mentor and guide for the famous Brazilian medium, [Francisco \(Chico\) C. Xavier](#), tells us in the book [On the Way to the Light](#), how the city of Rome was first settled:

“Tormented and vexed by repeated battles with the Gauls, the Etruscans decided to take up a new life, and guided indirectly by messengers from the Invisible World, a large portion of them settled in the future Rome, which at that time was nothing but a village of simple unprotected hovels” [\[221\]](#)

During the republican era of Rome's history it became a great power. The dominating authority of the entire Mediterranean Sea. The Spirit world envisioned Rome growing by spreading its good practices and bringing a civilized aspect to their nearby nations. Regrettably, Rome's leaders tasted power, as Emmanuel describes:

“Instead of extending its ties through education and harmony, it allowed itself to become captive to a host of aggressive and ambitious spirits, widening its influence in the world with the ballistas and catapults of its warriors” [\[222\]](#)

The Romans had brought much advancement, the concept of the family, active citizen participation, the importance of education, honor in business dealing, and organizational structure of institutions and in building infrastructure, to the ancient world. The Spirit world wished to save these gifts; therefore they attempted to rectify the errors of Rome with the coming of Christ, during Augustus’s reign. Regrettably, the advent of Christ and his followers could not right the ship, Emmanuel comments about the fall of Rome:

“The weakness and impenitence of human beings did not allow them to understand that Christianity had been called to the role of governance solely to educate the sentiments of those who governed, preparing them to take enlightenment and fraternity to the other peoples of the earth, who, at the time were regarded as barbarians by the culture of the Empire” [\[223\]](#)

What follows the fall of Rome truly demonstrates the power of the Spirit Kingdom, Emmanuel reports:

“The spiritual authorities, under Christ’s aegis, renewed the educational processes of the European world – at the time just starting today’s civilization – by calling all human beings to life in the field so that, by tilling the soil and being in contact with nature, they could learn more effectively” [\[224\]](#)

How many historians marvel at the fall of a great civilization into utter darkness, the loss of learning, medicine, and political systems; how could this have happened? It was the mass re-education of an entire population, required to bring Western Civilization up to the next level.

Where the dark ages may be seen as a huge leap backwards, it was a necessary re-education for the millions of souls who had lived in the glory days of the expanding empire. They had to be brought back down to understand that acquiring dominion over others is not the path to love, fraternity, and charity, but the road to perdition. Thus, a civilization was

destroyed and out of its ruins a new one created. The upward spiral was resumed with the advent of the Renaissance.

It's Not Just the Great Lords Who Create

As God set the creation of the universe in motion and the Great Lords utilize their creative powers to fashion solar systems and planets, there are lesser spiritual beings, exercising their free-will to flesh out the details. Astriel, explains the hierarchy of conception:

“It issues in the individual mind of the Chief Lord of the particular system. Under him are other great Lords who work in unison with his one governing idea. But these also have freedom in those things which are under their charge, and so on downward to the minute things of creation – the flowers and trees and animals and the formation of the face of the planet. It is on account of this latitude in creation and control that you have such diversity in detail; and because of the limit of restriction to the exercise of that free individuality that you have the unity which you find interpenetrating every department and sub-department of creation.” [\[225\]](#)

The Hindu's believe in many gods, which may be close to the truth, for the Great Lords and even those under them are gods according to our frame of reference. They create, they fashion, and they destroy to form their desires once again.

Interestingly, Astriel goes on to tell us about a cascading set of beings, who are part of the process to develop and maintain life. From intelligent spirits who possess free-will to living objects with robotic like functionality in which parameters are given and their software is sophisticated enough to control the system assigned. Astriel puts it in his own language, trying to convey the complexity of the system to 1920's level of technology:

“Under these supervisors there are also myriads of lesser ministers of different grade downward until some of the lowest orders may be scarcely be termed persons, for they merge into the lower species of life which you might term sensory, as distinguishing them from those who, like ourselves, are possessed not only of intelligence, but also of that independence in judgement which we know as freewill.” [\[226\]](#)

A picture emerges of a system vaster than our most wild imagination that follows orders from on high but is allowed room to improvise. A system which is supported by a massive set of auxiliary functionaries, who come prepared to accomplish the menial and detailed tasks with minimal programming. Somehow it all works, somehow bureaucracy doesn't grind the entire edifice to a halt.

I believe our God-made universe survives and thrives throughout all eternity because free-will is enshrined as its guiding principle. Unlike so many of our corporations and governments, where ego-driven leadership commands total authority and nothing is allowed without approval, our Maker understands that to turn beings into automatons is to destroy them and eventually the organizations producing them.

Uniqueness is All Around Us

Astriel gives us a concrete example of the effect of an independent spirit guiding our formation:

“Now, a little more about the earth itself. Geologists tell how some of the rocks are alluvial and others igneous in formation, and so on. But if you will carefully examine some of these you will find that they give off a certain vapor, or one might almost say magnetic influence. That is the effect of the original inspiration into them by those who formed them originally. And these characteristic are worthy of deeper study than they have hitherto received. The chemical composition has been, more or less, ascertained. But the more subtle influences proceeding from the ever-vibrating particles has been neglected. Yet when it is remembered that no piece of rock or stone is still, but that all its particles are in movement orderly and constant, it is only one step onward then to realize that, in order that this movement be maintained, there must be present some great force and, at the back of that force, a personality of which it is the expression.” [\[227\]](#)

The mark of the individual creator, like the signature on a painting, is ever-present in all things. Animal, vegetable, and mineral are all tagged by the Great Lord and his or her team that carried out the designs.

Our planet, our sky, our features, and the trajectory of our history is the result and ongoing desire of a Great Lord who wished our environment into

existence. Astriel sums it up:

“The whole material creation is nothing in itself and by itself. It is but the expression, on a lower plane, of personalities on higher planes, the effect of which their wills are the causes. As a man leaves the imprint of his character on his work day by day, so these great Creative Lords and their ministers have left the impress of their personality on these material phenomena.” [\[228\]](#)

We are blessed to have as our Creative Lord, Jesus Christ, who came to earth himself to turn the course of history. And is now, beginning in the 1850s with the revelation of the [Doctrine of Spiritism](#), preparing humankind for the next leap forward. He and his ministers are directing and guiding us. Allowing each individual spirit the opportunity to accumulate the lessons required so we may become part of the grand team to create, conjure, love, and embrace new creations and spirits.



Chapter 45 – The Seeds of Astrology -

Intersecting Spiritual Spheres Do Influence Earth

A spirit, who gave his name as Astriel, to the Rev. G. Vale Owen, an Anglican Vicar who received a series of messages from the spirit world in the 1920's told the good reverend the following about the influence of the planets upon us:

“Yes, friend, there is after all, something in the astrological idea, and perhaps your scientists do well to give it a wide berth, for it may not be much understood by, and would probably be fraught with danger too, such as they who do not understand that spiritual power is spiritual power. It is real and tremendous, and every sphere of all these is reinforced or modified by the others. The study of these things should be approached with the utmost reverence and prayer, for these are realms where the Angels of high estate go softly, and we of lesser estate look on and wonder after the Sublimity of that Being Who unifies all this in Himself, and Who has no Name that can be transmitted to us who only can reach out after Him a little way and then our arm is shortened; who can only see a little way and then the light beyond is darkness by reason of its intensity.” [\[229\]](#)

There are concepts in the paragraph above which must be explained in order to comprehend Astriel's meaning. Even after one is introduced to the concept of overlapping and intersecting spiritual power, Astriel lets us know that understanding the state of God (“Being Who unifies”) lies beyond our and to a lesser extent his reach. Nevertheless, to even begin to envision what Astriel reveals about the influence of spiritual spheres upon our life should allow us all to place our lives in a different context.

We are not on earth to be conceived, raised, and tossed out into the working world without a purpose. Not the dreams of our parents, not the desires of our extended families, not our own chaotic choices that we made in our early years are the primary drivers of our destiny. We are placed individually for a specific purpose and we are pushed ahead collectively for

a targeted destination. And the position of the planets, stars, and galaxies have an effect.

Astrology – Modern Thoughts

Astrology has its fans and detractors. To its opponents, it is a scam, a method of fleecing gullible people out of their ready cash. Most have heard about the college study, where each student was asked to supply their personal information so a complete astrological profile could be written. The next week, the professor handed out the results. He handed each student their own report. He asked the students to silently read them and then comment on their precision. Most of the students were amazed at how accurate they were. Many were convinced that somehow their personal feelings and milestones in their life were correctly interpreted by reading the stars.

Until the professor asked each person to give their profile to the student in front of them, so each could read what the other thought was a revelation. To their astonishment, each paper was exactly the same. The profile was written general enough, but with hints of specificity that each student at first believed it was meant entirely for them.

Granted, fooling college freshmen isn't a difficult task, but the story gets at the crux of what the detractors despise about astrology; generalities that could mean nothing and something depending on each individual's interpretation. To the non-believers, astrology is a worthless diversion for empty heads. The accessibility of astrological advice in newspapers and magazines for the general public reinforces their opinion on a daily basis.

On the other hand, there are personal stories of charts and fore-warnings of great accuracy. In fact, I will relate one told to me by a friend. He is from India. It is customary, for his family, at the birth of a child to have an entire life-chart created. At his birth a chart was completed. As a typical boy, he had no interest in it. As he grew older, he never even gave it a second thought.

When he was married, his mother gave it to his wife. His wife read the entire tome and was astounded. It correctly foretold the year in which he broke his arm, it even properly foretold the very arm that was broken. Plus, the year of his marriage and other factors were uncannily accurate. It even

foretells the year and manner of his death, but, he told me, his wife would not let him see that part.

How does one reconcile these two extremes? I suggest we think of Astrology the same way many now do about near death experiences. For many years they were dismissed as hallucinations caused by the temporary lack of oxygen to the brain, or some other medical cause. Given recent research that has eliminated each theory and proves that experiences persisted even after accepted clinical brain death occurred, one is left with the response that something did occur, although exactly what caused it is not currently provable. Doubters will still look for material causation and Spiritist will sit back and know that the spirit world is interacting with some souls for a purpose. A purpose that invariably entails a lesson given to assist a person to grow spiritually.

Hence, while there certainly exists many who dabble in talking to spirits as a con game and a way to make a living out of the desire of people to speak to the departed, there is also a legitimate phenomenon taking place. For those who have experienced it themselves and for those practitioners who speak to souls in the spirit world to genuinely help others, know that we are on this earth for a purpose and that we are connected to the spirit world.

Spiritual Zones Surrounding the Earth

The layers of the higher regions, levels of heaven, is revealed in the book, *Life Beyond the Veil*, in *The Lowlands of Heaven* section. The book was psychographed in the early 1900s. It was a communication to the Rev. G. Vale Owen from Astriel in the spirit world that educates us in what it really means to talk about the “powers above us”:

“When we said ‘the powers which watch over the world,’ we did not, of course, mean to localize these powers on one side of this planet, but to imply the all-enveloping watch which the heavenly powers keep about the sphere which is called Earth. These powers are resident in zones of which the Earth itself is the center, and they lie in concentric circles around it. The inferior zones are those near the planet’s surface, and progress in power and glory as the distance is increased. But yet, space

must be enlarged in meaning when applied to these spheres; for distance has not the same obstructive sense to us as it has to you.” [\[230\]](#)

Astriel is expanding on what Jesus told us in John 14:2:

“In my Father’s house are many rooms. If it were not so, would I have told you that I go to prepare a place for you?”

Heaven isn’t just one enormous location, but a series of spheres which encapsulate all lower ones, like the Russian doll whereby the larger doll holds all of the others, with each higher level reserved for those who made the effort to ascend. And this is only the rings of heaven for those who have risen up from earth.

Astriel tells us what the rings around the earth mean to spirits:

“For instance, when I am in the tenth of these zones, my cognizance is limited, more or less, by that Tenth zone as to its outer or superior boundary. I may, on occasion and by permission, visit the Eleventh zone, or even go higher; but residence in those higher zones is not permitted me. On the other hand, the zones inferior to the Tenth are not impossible to me; for the zone in which I dwell, being a sphere, includes within itself, even geometrically considered, all the nine inferior spheres. So that we may, for the sake of clarity of understanding, out it thus: The Earth is the center about which many spheres are, and is enclosed in all those spheres. And the residents in the earth life are potentially in touch with all those spheres, and actually so in ratio to their altitude spirituality considered – spiritually, because these spheres are spiritual and not material.” [\[231\]](#)

In essence, we, in our physical bodies, are carefully watched over by the higher spheres above us. Our thoughts, wishes, and prayers are analyzed and possibly acted upon by legions of workers whose job is to determine our progress during our trials on earth.

Now consider the larger picture. Imagine the earth circling the sun, but much larger, with spiritual spheres accompanying the earth as it revolves around the sun in its orbit. Simultaneously, the other planets in our solar system are also rotating, with much larger foot prints.

Add the spheres that surround our solar system, and other solar systems revolve around hubs in our galaxy, you begin to get the idea of intersecting circles on a colossal basis. Astriel tells us in his words:

“But as you progress outward you come into a more complicated state of affairs. For not the Earth only but every planet in this Solar system has its like complement of spiritual zones or spheres. So, as you go farther and farther from the Earth, you come to a realm where the spheres of Earth and the nearest planet interweave with each other. As every planet is served with like attendance, so the complication is multiplied, and you will begin to see that the study of spheres is not so simple as good people among you evidently think it to be, who demand from us information as to the meaning of this thing.

Draw a diagram of the Solar system, with the Sun at its center and the planets roughly in their respective places around him. Then begin with Earth and encircle him with say, a hundred circles. Do the same with Jupiter, Mars, Venus and the others and treat the Sun in like manner; and you will have a faint idea of our work and its absorbing interest, but profound depths of meaning, who include in our studies that of the Spheres of God.” [\[232\]](#)

Astriel continues with explaining to G. Vale Owen, what applies to our solar system applies to every other solar system. As to the question of how many spheres there are, Astriel tells us that spirits on the tenth level do not know that answer and would have to greatly ascend before being able to come close to a number.

Spiritual Influence of Other Planet’s Spheres

Finally, we arrive at the influence of other spheres from other bodies than the earth:

“We have said that these spheres are spheres of spiritual power. Now, two worlds affect each the other by means of that which your scientists name gravitation. Also, two spheres of spiritual power, coming into contact, cannot fail to act and counteract each on the other. Referring to your mental diagram of the Solar system you will see that Earth is, of necessity, acted on by a large number of spheres, and that the greater

number of these are they which are those of the Sun and other planets.”

[\[233\]](#)

Hence, the very fact that the earth comes into contact with the spiritual spheres of other planets, means that in some manner we are affected by that influence. Just as gravity continually modifies the rotation of the earth around the sun, we too are exposed to spiritual power which could alter our own personal trajectories.

In the book, *Genesis – Miracles and Predictions According to Spiritism*, assembled and partially written by Allan Kardec with excerpts of communications from spirits, we are told, by the spirit Arago, how the human race progresses, by revolutions. Upheavals that may span centuries, thus unseen by individuals, are nevertheless driven (wholly or partially) by planetary/spiritual influences.

“Within a particular planetary system, all the bodies comprising it react upon one another. All physical influences are in solidarity, and there is not one of the effects that you designate as great disturbances that is not a consequence of the combination of influences within the entire system.

I will state further that planetary systems react upon one another due to the nearness or distance that results from their orbital movement through the myriads of systems that compose our nebula. I will go even further and state that our nebula, which is like an archipelago in the immensity of space, with its orbital movement through the myriads of nebulae, is subject to the influence of those it nears.

Hence, nebulae react upon nebulae and systems react upon systems, just as planets react upon planets and the elements of each planet react upon another, and thus successively down to the atom. Hence, on each world, there are local or widespread revolutions that do not appear to be disturbances because the brevity of life allows only for the perception of partial effects.” [\[234\]](#)

I again use the quote I discussed in Chapter 42 from Arago, who describes how these spiritual waves change our points of view, although we still retain our free-will:

“Unconscious at first, this turmoil, which is nothing more than a vague desire, an indefinable yearning for something better, a need for change, is expressed through silent agitation, and then through actions that prepare social revolutions, which, believe it or not, also have their own lifespan, similar to physical revolutions, because everything is connected. If your spirit sight were not limited by the veil of matter, you would see these fluidic currents, which, like thousands of conductor wires, link up things of the spirit world and the physical world.” [\[235\]](#)

Unbeknownst to the billions of people on earth, there are invisible forces entering our consciousness, which causes a great many to rethink previous positions, to no longer accept what has been tolerated for decades, but to strive for something new. And the alignment and proximity of planets and solar systems have a hand in the gradual movement of a culture to a new aspiration. Like the course change of an immense tanker, which slowly veers to a new direction. The hand of spiritual force guides us onto an alternate path.

Spiritual Influence from Spheres is Constantly Changing

As with everything else on our planet and in the universe, all is in constant motion. A star or planet doesn't just hover over us, shining its rays of spiritual willpower to spur us in a certain direction. The mix and type of influences is continuously imperceptibly shifting, modifying the thought waves entering our brain. Astriel explains the effects of the process:

“Still concerning the Solar system, we say that, on considering what we have already said, you will see that we have not yet mentioned all the complications which enter into the study of these spheres. For not alone do the concentric circles of zones about all the planets and the sun commingle with all the rest, but also the relative combination is continually changing with the changing positions of these bodies and their consequent proximity to, or distance from, one another. So that it is quite literally correct to say that during no two seconds of time is the influence from them impinging on the surface of the earth the same.

Nor is any combination of their influences identical in its effect or intensity all over the earth at the same time, but differs in different

localities. There must further be taken into our calculations the stream of radiation coming to this Solar system from the systems of other stars. All these things have to be reckoned in, for bear still in mind that we are speaking of zones and spheres of spiritual beings whose powers are energizing continuously, and whose wakefulness never fails.” [\[236\]](#)

Given the complexity of calculating the dominating influence of any one planet or star upon an individual, the ability to precisely chart the effects of the planets upon our future is beyond our current capability. While astrology may have correctly guessed at the effect of a planet, the actual spiritual radiations bombarding us are of a much more complex nature.

On a broad basis, I venture that astrology can predict the future like the weather stations of seventy years ago could. Sometimes they were partially accurate and other times not even in the ballpark. Only with the advent of super computers and intricate modeling of literally thousands and thousands of factors is forecasting the weather becoming more reliable.

Stars Do Have Influence

At the end of the day, do I believe in astrology? I am certain that we are influenced by planetary, and larger systemic celestial positions. I am not convinced how astrological charts correctly map personal destinies. I surmise, hence I am only putting forth a theory, that particular astrologers are also mediums, who intuitively read and interpret planetary data correctly when it comes to individuals or even possibly entire nations concerning their destinies.

Through their connections and sense of spiritual and planetary influences, gifted astrologers, with assistance from helpful spirits, could be able to peer into the future and discern where the waves of invisible forces could push us. Above all else, whatever challenges come onto our path, we retain free-will to determine our choice of action and our grace in the midst of turmoil.



Chapter 46 – Origin of the Species – We (and animals) are Copies of Life in the Spirit World

Life on earth is extremely diverse. So much so that we are still discovering new life in even the most hostile environments. Deep in the ocean, in pools of boiling sulfur water; places where once we would have never expected life to occur.

Many put this down to the quasi-infinite variability caused by natural selection. Life has a way of modifying itself to multiple environments. According to Spiritism, this is partially true ... only that many transformations were given a push or directed by the spirit realm is missing from Darwin's theory.

But if the spirit world guided the creation of many forms of life, where did their model come from? Where did they derive their inspiration? Was everything just thought up and each planet had completely new life forms designed; custom-made for its atmosphere, gravity, and potential life conditions?

On earth we know that very few ideas are sprung from a completely blank slate. There was always something before; always a preceding object or thought which was modified to create a new branch. Most of what we now see, hear, and use on a daily basis, was derived from an earlier precedent. First the horse, then the buggy, next a car, later a self-driving car.

Where did life on earth get its inspiration from? What model was used to create us? The answers to these questions are supplied by Zabdiel. He is a spirit who lives on the tenth level of heaven, he came with a group of spirits to reveal fundamental facts about the real universe we reside in.

Zabdiel is the spirit who sent a stream of communications to the Rev. G. Vale Owen from November 3, 1913 to January 8, 1914. All were published in a book, which was first serialized in the English papers in the 1920's, *The*

Life Beyond the Veil ; which is a series of four books. The messages from Zabdiel are found in book two, titled *The Highlands of Heaven* .

From Zabdiel's high vantage point, he lives in the tenth level of heaven, he can see the earth and all of the effort put into our growth by those below him. He is also knowledgeable about the directives from the stages above him. He doesn't know how many, but he tells us he is very far from knowing how many levels there are above.

From his perch, far up above us, he tells G. Vale Owen, from which we are patterned after:

“I now would tell you somewhat of the inner meaning of what men call the origin of species in animal life. But now, and at once, I would say the term is all too large; for the origin of the different creations in animal life is not found in the realm of matter, but has its genesis in these realms. We have learned here that, when the Universe of systems was moving towards its present form and constitution, those who had charge to watch and work took their counsels from those of higher degree, and on those counsels shaped their own wisdom.” [\[237\]](#)

Zabdiel takes us back to before, or at the very least, the early stages of the Big Bang. When the Divine Laws guiding the physical universe were set in place. High Lords steered the evolution of our universe based upon guidelines established by Higher Lords of Creation. The recommendations were:

“At that time it was seen that in the heavenly spheres there were many diversities both of the forms of life as bodily manifest, and of mind in its working. And it was resolved that the universe was meant to reflect the personalities and types of those who were commissioned to carry out the work of its development. To this conclusion they were divinely guided, for when their plan was completed it was given them by revelation to know that the Divine approval was upon it in general kind; but it was not of absolute perfection. Nevertheless, it received the imprimatur of the All Father Who vouchsafed them freedom to work out His will according to their own capacities and powers.” [\[238\]](#)

Hence we are reflections of the creatures residing in the spirit world. Far from perfect images; there must be limitations and adjustments for many

physical parameters. Nevertheless, our frail form is a simulacrum of the High Lord of our universe. From this outline of a plan, all else was spawned:

“Thus arose the different orders and species of animal and vegetable and mineral life, and also of human type and racial character. And these things being initiated, again the Divine Mind pronounced His general approval or, as our Bible has it, He found it to be ‘very good.’

But high as were those who were chief in this matter of creation, yet they were less than the Only Omnipotent and, as the work of ordering the universe was very great, and wide in extent, the imperfections of their work became magnified as they worked out; so that, to a single mind, and one of low degree, as is that of a man, those imperfections loomed vast and great. For it is not competent to one who is so small and undeveloped to be able to see both good and evil equally, but the evil is the easier seen to him, and the good too high and wonderful for him to grasp its meaning and power.” [\[239\]](#)

Like a child who is given the choice to share or not, invariably chooses to hoard what they have; we too look longer and more lovingly at what is counterproductive to the good. We determine that the short-term gain of easy dollars by nefarious means to be superior to displaying fairness and a sense of honor. We pick the most beautiful and pleasing partner over the steady and most loving. We buy the expensive car to impress over the efficient and cost-effective automobile.

Feeding our selfishness and senses leads to the longer path to ascension. Taking an extended amount of incarnations to learn the difficult lesson of living by the Golden Rule.

Man’s Place in the Universe

Zabdiel tells us the universe wasn’t created for humankind alone. While, we as physical beings are truly in charge of the earth, we only are appointed caretakers of the planet by the grace of the Supreme Being.

Successive societies on earth use terra firma as a college to learn; the levels of concentric spiritual spheres above us, also function as a training ground for less dense and pure souls to ascend. Zabdiel tells us, “According

to the innate power of any being, man or angel, so is his environment proportioned and constituted.” [\[240\]](#)

As stark as the differences in layout, facilities, and curriculum of a kindergarten to a university; so are the levels from earth to above. Show the range of classes, laboratories, and workload to a kindergartener and they will stare with a complete lack of comprehension of what is ahead of them. But allow that child to slowly work up the ladder from grade to grade, then advancement seems natural. So is it with spiritual ascension. The harder you work the more successful you will be.

Zabdiel tells us our attainment is our choice. God has presented the path, it is up for us to take the first and subsequent steps:

“Let men remember this and keep it in mind, and then they will the better appreciate the dower of free will given to them, a gift which no one of all the heavenly hierarchy may take from him. And they would not if they might; for in so doing their material world would be deteriorated in quality, and the less capable of enabling them in their own advancement.

Now, I fear that some who read what I have written will say that hereby man becomes merely the tool of those of higher grade, to do with him what they will for their own advantage. Not so; and for the reason I have just stated – that he is, and ever must remain, a free-willed being.

But more, the one great power which animates those who serve the Father is Love. These are no mere despots of oppression. Power and oppression are correlatives of earth creation. Here power means an issuing forth of love, and the greater the power the greater the love which is sent forth.” [\[241\]](#)

We are truly blessed to live in a spiritual universe so unlike our present creation. Where our preponderance on grabbing temporary pleasures has created an environment dominated by mean-spirited men and women using the majority of us as pawns to achieve their materialistic goals. But, again, we should be grateful, for if we hadn't been forced to live in such chaos and filth, we wouldn't realize the how the absence of good twists everything into a dim and shallow existence.

The fight to raise yourself out of this pit is indeed daunting. Knowing that to tend to good and honesty will be met with numerous obstacles makes even beginning the battle intimidating. Zabdiel supplements our courage with the rewards of ascension to wondrous lands and fortifies our defenses with legions of spirits ready to lend a hand and shine a light on the true path. Zabdiel finishes his message with:

“We see more than you do of the awful travail of those who err from this service, and yet we do not despair, because we see also the more clearly the meaning and purpose of it all. And thus seeing, we know that men will one day rejoice as we do when they too shall, each in his own time, ascend to the higher spheres of service and, from this point of vantage, continue his development. In that day he too will use for his training the material we are using, and of which he is a part and portion, when others have taken his place, and he the place of those now lifting him upward.

‘To him that overcometh,’ said the Christ, ‘will I give to sit with Me in My Throne, even as I overcame, and am set down with my Father in His Throne.’” [\[242\]](#)

Revelation 3:21 now makes perfect sense. Just as Jesus began as a spirit and had to toil up the ladder to become a great Lord, we must perform the same tasks. One day, millions, billions, or trillions of years from now a spirit residing on earth, laboring to hold on to their values and love for all, will have ascended to the level of our present day Christ and lead another planet full of human-like creatures out of the darkness.



Chapter 47 – A Glimpse into the Higher Levels of Heaven

According to Zabdiel, above the tenth level is where spirits start to actively participate in the creative process to lead and effect changes in our planet and any other locations a spirit may be sent to. Only after, many lifetimes of trials on earth, and multiple demonstrations of being able to fulfill missions of importance, would a spirit be able to graduate to such an exalted pinnacle.

In the books by the Rev. G. Vale Owen, different groups of spirits talk to him about life in heaven. Using a system to help us understand that, as Jesus said, “My father’s house has many rooms” (John 14:2), heaven has many levels; spirits communicated with G. Vale Owen using a number system. Each successive stage implies a higher level of spiritual knowledge and expertise. Hence, they used from one to ten to denote the first ten levels of heaven above the earth.

In *The Life Beyond the Veil* ; which is a series of four books, the spirit Zabdiel talks about the tenth level of heaven and below. The Rev. G. Vale Owen’s mother, spoke to him about the lower levels of heaven. Each higher sphere has its own cities, colleges, and governing organization. Each has its own particular landmarks and course of knowledge which spirits must master in order to rise to the next level.

Zabdiel on a visit to the upper regions of the tenth level is allowed to look up and beyond. He was invited to the roof of a ten-sided tower. A facility which processes the requests from the tenth level of heaven and below. Each side concentrated on a separate sphere.

From his high vantage point he could make out:

“Below me I saw the woodlands by which I had ascended. Further away stretched range on range of high mountains, all bathed in the high celestial light, and glittering like jewels of many colors. About some of those peaks there played a shimmering beauty which reached them

from the Eleventh Sphere; and there they seemed to be alive and responsive to the presence of high beings whose nature was of a degree so refined that their forms were just beyond the circumference of visibility to one, like myself, of the Tenth Sphere.

Yet I knew that these were come over from their own brighter region, and were on some work of love engaged in this my own. At that I rejoiced very much for the knowledge of the love and power beneficent all about me, and my only speech was silence, which spoke more eloquent words of mine could do.” [\[243\]](#)

As he stood in silence, the guide who let him onto the roof, approached him and ask if he would like to see further afield. The guide told Zabdiel, that on occasion, he was allowed to enable those of the tenth sphere, to peer beyond their natural boundary, so they could examine what lays ahead.

The spirit world allows souls to catch a glimpse of the life above, so they will motivate themselves to strive for advancement. We too are encouraged. People on earth are given dreams, visions, near death experiences, and other stimuli to cause them to think about the spiritual world and what it offers. We are presented with our future, if we place materialism in its proper priority, and live loving and honest lives.

Zabdiel has heard that Jesus is reported to reside in the fifteenth level of heaven. Therefore he is anxious to glimpse into the spheres above him. While he hesitates, he thinks about the immense rays of love and wisdom that shine from the higher spheres. Therefore he accepts the gift. Zabdiel describes what happened next:

“Presently he came forth, and he was changed greatly; for his robe was not upon him, but he stood naked before me but for a circlet of flashing gems upon his brow. How beautiful he was as he stood there bathed in that soft penetrating light which intensified about him and moved and lived, until his body was like liquid glass and gold, and shone forth increasingly till I looked downwards and shaded my eyes from his exceeding brightness.

Then he spoke to me and told me to stand before him, while he kept to my rearward, using his power upon me, but not blinding me with his radiance. Thus we stood, his hands upon my shoulders, and the light

from him enveloping me also, and, streaming forth on either side of me, it shone far out blending into the distance with those other lights far away about the peaks. Thus a lane appeared in front of me where I stood, its either side bordered with a wall of light, and the space between not dim but of lesser brightness.

I could not penetrate those walls with my vision, as they swept away across the deeps and heights of the mountaintops, opening out as they went, on either side in such-wise that, while I stood, as it might be, in the angle where the two walls of living flame met just behind me, yet in front it was a space of great breadth between the walls where I could see them far away.

Then he spoke again and told me to watch this space. I did so, and there grew a vision very wonderful upon my gaze, so that I who have beheld many beauties and marvels have never seen aught so entrancing as this.” [\[244\]](#)

Imagine the power required to open a portal from one sphere, operating according to specific Divine Laws to another, with a more refined set. As if a mathematician went from solving a simple Bayesian probability problem to a hundred indeterminate polynomial. A spirit must be educated and gifted increased abilities to travel upwards. Each successive leap alters their basic composition. So much so, that when a spirit journeys downward, they must transform themselves to fit in whatever sphere they landed.

Hence, Zabdiel’s guide had to create a special lens – powerful enough to not only magnify but to translate higher order reality into lower. All for Zabdiel to comprehend what he was seeing. Nothing is by chance in the spirit realm. Zabdiel was shown this vision, so he could dictate what he had seen to the Rev. G. Vale Owen in the early 1900s. Then from there to you in the twenty-first century. This is what he witnessed:

“The two rays struck one on either side a mountain peak which rose into the sky, a sharp needle with lesser spurs about it below. As I looked it began to change, and I saw a Temple emerge into my view, and about it were a host of high angels in robes of light, moving here and there. There was a high porch and upon it stood a great Angel who held a cross aloft, as if he showed that symbol to some congregation of people in some other far-away sphere. On each arm of the cross stood a child,

one in rose-pink garments, the other in green and brown. They sang some song I could not understand, and then, as they ended, each laid his hands upon his breast and bowed his head in worship.” [\[245\]](#)

Zabdiel saw a glimpse of a higher spiritual plane. He was able to see a group in worship. I have noticed in other communications from spirits to the R. G. Vale Owen, there are mentions of children (or the images of children) playing important symbolic roles. When Jesus said, “Let the little children come to me and do not hinder them, for to such belongs the kingdom of heaven” (Matthew 19:14), His small parable strikes at the heart of attaining spiritual ascension. One must be child-like in their humbleness, lack of pre-dispositions, and honest love to accept the tenets of Spiritism. Past preconceptions must be thrown away and love extended to all in order to fully comprehend the message and the pathway to the light.

Next, Zabdiel was requested to turn his attention to another location:

“But my guide now turned me about to the right and another vista came into my range of vision. Upon a hillside far away I saw a Throne. It was of light and fire mingled, and there sat upon it a woman who looked in silence into the far, far distance unmoving. She was clad in gossamer which sparkled like silver as her body shone through it; but over her head was a robe of violet-colored light which fell upon her shoulders and behind her, framing her beauty in such-wise that I thought of a pearl hung against a velvet curtain.

About her, but below her Throne, were her attendants, both men and women. They stood there before the Throne and on either side, silent and waiting. They were all of much more brightness than I, but none was so radiant as she who sat there serene in all her loveliness. I noted her face. It was full of that carefulness which is born of love and pity, but her eyes were dark in their depth of high wisdom and power. She rested her two arms upon the arms of the Throne, and I noted further that all her limbs told of strength, but such strength as is mingled with the gentleness of motherhood.

Then suddenly she stirred, pointed with her hand here, beckoned there, waved to others, as she issued, in no haste, but briskly and incisively, her commands.

All suddenly the crowd was in movement. I saw one party rise and fly off like a flash of lightning into the distance. Another went in the other direction. And other troops I saw bring forth horses, mount and ride away into space. Some wore flowing robes, and some were girt with what looked like plated armor. Some were parties of men, others of women, and others of men and women both. In, as it were, a moment's time, the sky was dotted with diamonds and rubies and emeralds, as there appeared flashing on their heavenly way: and the dominating color of the group shone back to me, as I stood to gaze in awe and silence.” [\[246\]](#)

Great forces at her command, a flip of the wrist sent legions of angels off to some great task. Men and horses arrived and left with a nod and an unspoken thought. Zabdiel could have been describing ancient men's vision of the house of the gods, where the great Hera ordered lesser gods to fulfill her wishes. With no hesitation from her troops, all would immediately respond.

Zabdiel uses words like troops, and described others as wearing armor; which leads to the question are there forces that are like an army or police force in heaven? In the book *Memoirs of a Suicide*, by Yvonne A. Pereira, the spirit [Camilo Branco](#), writes about his time in the Lower Zones, or the Umbral in Portuguese. Camilo committed suicide and was destined to spend the years from his death at his own hands to the time of his natural, or pre-planned demise, in an undesirable location, with other suicides.

He and a group of forsaken souls, spent what seemed to be an eternity together, housed in caves along the walls of a valley. Periodically, they would see a caravan, led by a banner labeled “Legion of the Servants of Mary”, that would travel through the valley and summon those souls whose time was up and would be taken to a hospital, another facility ran by Mary of Nazareth, to recover and to learn how to avoid suicide in their next life. Camilo describes what he saw from his perch on the side of the mountain:

“The column was led by a small platoon of lancers to open the way, while other lancers flanked it to provide a security barrier, making it very clear that they were very well protected against any hostilities that might come from the outside. The commander held up a white banner with his right hand, and on it we could read, written in sky-blue letters,

this extraordinary inscription, which had the effect of infusing us with uncontainable and singular awe: ‘Legion of the Servants of Mary’.

The lancers, shield and lance in hand, had a tanned complexion and were dressed frugally, recalling the Egyptian warriors of antiquity. Heading the expedition was a venerable-looking man wearing a white physician’s coat and badge.” [\[247\]](#)

The woman on the Throne, wearing gossamer which sparkled like silver, could have been Mary, or one of her assistants, commanding her great armies of mercy, to recover lost souls, who had left their agreed upon course of life too early and were suffering in the lower reaches of the spirit realm. She may have been directing her attendants for this or that task of mercy. As she received pleas of assistance, she ordered her staff, complete with unspoken instructions, to perform their duty.

Zabdiel continued scanning the horizon:

“Thus the lane of light was moved from place to place the whole horizon round and, at each pause, something new to me I saw. Each scene was diverse in character, but of equal beauty with the rest. In such manner I saw some of those who were of higher degree than any I yet beheld at work in the service of the Father. And when I saw, by changing the light, that my friend had withdrawn, once more into the Sanctuary behind me, I sighed for bliss too great, and sank down overcome with the glory of the service of God as I had seen it in operation among those who watched us as we, too, worked, and took account of our needs.

It was thus I came to understand, as never before, how that all the inferior spheres are included within those above, and lying sharply defined, away each from its fellows. This Tenth Sphere included in itself all those below and was, in its turn included in those above, together with the others below the Tenth. This is well understood here, up to our own degree. But as we advance, this inclusion of spheres becomes more complex and wonderful, and there are things to understand in it which are unfolded but little by little. This I have come to see, and am all agape for the further advance when I am ripe for it.”

[\[248\]](#)

As the earth and its surrounding spheres reach up to an unknown height, consider the intersecting spheres from other planets and the spiritual sphere enveloping our solar system ... all interconnected, all actions affecting the others, all managed by spirits higher than Zabdiel could possibly see from his relatively low vantage point.

God has not created a simple universe, with one planet of humans waiting to be angels merged together with an unending heaven circling above. On the contrary, there are multiple planets, of varying degrees, heavens above each, and heavens on top of heavens. With a cascading control structure overseen by spirits of indescribable power.

The immensity of it all strikes Zabdiel with force – he had thought, but didn't fully comprehend the structure of the spirit universe that God created, until he peered out from the roof-top of the watchtower. He lets us inside his thinking:

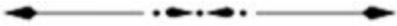
“Oh, the wonder and beauty and wisdom of God! If what I know be but a little of His scheme of love, then what must the whole be like, and how tremendous! Veiled are even the lower glories of the Heavenly Lands from mortal eyes, which strain to see them. Brother, be content to go slowly in these things. Such things are veiled in love and mercy. For, could they burst upon you in their fullness, your mind would give way before it all, and you would for long, long ages fear to go ahead lest worse befall you. I see it now as once I could not. It is wise and good – all wise and altogether good. And he is Love indeed.” [\[249\]](#)

Like a small child watching his brothers and sisters go to school, only knowing that they take a backpack and a lunch, but beyond that, little else. We too, are but babes in the woods, living woefully with our own misconceptions. The major delusion being is that we don't need to strive to enter heaven only just be ourselves.

We confuse unconditional love with the freedom to enter heaven in any state of development. Zabdiel provided us with his illustrations of heaven to motivate us. The scenes painted by Zabdiel are on the mantel, waiting to be taken hold of ... but only if we work for them.

Our efforts must be turned inward. First, improve our inner self. Lower the priority of adding material possessions and raise the hours spent on

building character. Add to your capacity for love, charity, fraternity, and honesty, in every situation. Make this your path and you too will one day view the highlands of heaven.



Chapter 48 – Water of Life – Water in the Spirit

Realm

We all realize how vital water is for our survival, on so many levels. Water is important in the spirit realm too ... but in different ways than on earth. Whereas on our globe, the property of water is constant, the waters of the spiritual spheres allow different properties to be associated with different bodies of water.

The spirit Kathleen communicated to the Rev. G. Vale Owen, about the importance of water. She expressed her thoughts about the Water of Life and how water is endowed to serve the purpose set by spirits. On November 8, 1917, she told G. Vale Owen:

“The waters of the river or fountain or lake are often treated by high spirits and endowed with virtues of strengthening or enlightenment. Sometimes people bath in them and gather bodily strength from the life-vibration which have been set up in the water by the exercise of some group of angel-ministers. I know of a fountain situated on the top of a high tower which sends forth a series of musical chords of deep harmony when it is set to play. This is used instead of bells to call people of the surrounding lands together when some ceremony is forward. Moreover, its spray disperses itself over a wide radius, and is seen to fall around the gardens and homes spread out over the plain in the form of flakes of light of different colors. These flakes are so constituted as to bring to those on whom or around whom they fall a sense of comradeship and communal love which makes the recipient the more eager to be away to the gathering. Also by this process is borne through the district a sense of time and place of meeting, and often, too, the knowledge of some Angel Visitor who is to address the assembly or to transact some business as deputy of the Lord of his Sphere.” [\[250\]](#)

Therefore, like everything else in the spirit world, water is fungible, like white is used as a base for paint, water is merely the foundation and other

properties may be added to the mix ... until water becomes more than a method to quench your thirst; it becomes a method to alter your perspective.

In the example above, water is used as a signage, a clarion call for an important event. But it is more than that, this instance of water alters your perception, to urge all touched by the tiniest drop to desire to attend the advertised event.

All of the communications from the spirit Kathleen are in *The Life Beyond the Veil* ; which is a series of four books. The message concerning the Water of Life is in Book Three – *The Ministry of Heaven* .

Next Kathleen speaks about a secluded area, an area of natural beauty, with roads lined by columns of trees. After introducing the landscape, she describes the particular properties of the water in the countryside:

“The chief properties of the waters of this river whose banks we now follow upwards is that of peace. In a way far beyond all earthly understanding all the qualities of its waters infuse peace to him who strolls beside its waters. Its various colors and hues, the murmur of its flowing, the plants to which it contributes fertility, the shape and appearance of its rocks and banks – all, in a very intense measure, bring peace to the soul who needs it. And there are many who need that peace among those returning from the lower spheres across the great lake, for it is a strenuous life we lead at times, my friend, and not at all the deadly monotonous existence so many earth people imagine. So that there are times when it is necessary to lay the burden down for awhile, and for our future operations regain that calm and strong quietude of spirit so necessary to the adequate carrying out of our allotted work.”

[\[251\]](#)

Kathleen speaks about the need for rest by spirits. At first glance, this goes against our concept of life in heaven – free of worries and stress. While we know, through the marvelous books by the spirit Andre Luiz about the first levels of heaven, which, while a paradise to live in, still entails required work and learning from each soul. Therefore, to combat infinite boredom, we are given a purpose as spirits.

Without goals we become lifeless, hence we are shepherded from one level of heaven to another, not by force, but by persuasion. Spirits are

encouraged to learn, they are given tasks to perform, and are rewarded for good work and achievement. With complex effort involved, methods to unwind, relax, and rest are necessary.

While each body of water may have its unique characteristics, everything else does too. What is meant by everything else? Kathleen supplies the answer:

“You must also understand that there is in everything here a permeating personality. Every forest, every grove, every tree, lake, stream, meadow, flower, house, has a pervading personality. Itself it is not a person, but its existence and all its attributes and qualities are consequent on the sustained and continuous volition of living beings, and their personality it is which is felt by all who come into contact with each and any of these, and that in a degree in ratio to their sensitiveness in the particular direction of the resident personality. Some, for instance, are more sensitive to those beings whose activity lies in the trees; others to those of the river. But all seem to sense the qualities of a building, especially when they enter within, for these are erected mostly by spirits more nearly of their own quality and degree, while most of what we call nature spirits are of a state and manner of existence and of function much more removed.” [\[252\]](#)

Everything is alive and everything has a purpose in the spirit realm. It is the same on earth, only we don't notice it. Kathleen tells us:

“Now, what obtains in these realms is usually found true in your earth sphere also, only in a lesser degree of intensity as sensed by the ordinary individual, consequent on his deep immersion in matter at this present stage of evolution. It is only less apparent, it is not less true.” [\[253\]](#)

The spirit and our particular physical universe is a logical construct created by the Divine Intelligence. The Divine Intelligence (otherwise known as The Spirituality, God, The Supreme Intelligence, The Great Architect) directs high spirits to build galaxies, solar systems, planets, commence life, guide evolution, and nurture immature spirits – that's us – through the reincarnation process so we too, one day, can become high spirits who cooperate with orders from the Most High.

We look around and see solid objects, but that is only a function of the limitations of our temporary physical bodies. We are handicapped, because a higher degree of awareness is not required for our current state of training. As we advance, and we incarnate, we shall inhabit bodies with more range and capabilities.



Chapter 49 – Imperfect Beauty Came From Imperfect Construction

The spirit Kathleen communicated to the Rev. G. Vale Owen, about the beginning of Creation. On December 18, 1917, she told G. Vale Owen, about the perfect beginnings of the Spirit Universe and how it lost its flawlessness:

“By the Ultimate His power projected, love first had its birth, and was found to be sweetness so perfect that the Sons of God bathed in love, and of their contact came forth beauty. That is why all beauty is lovable and all love is simple and unalloyed, and in whatever phase it be manifest is full of beauty. But when the will of those who were given to act and bear their part in the development of the Realm of Beauty ran counter to the main stream of Beauty impelled by love, then ensured an element which, being born of will acting not in consonance with original holiness, beings were evolved who were beautiful but not altogether beautiful, and their impetus once being blended with the ever-flowing stream of developing chaos, there were also evolved others who were less and less of beauty, but none altogether lacking of some dim strain of beauty much overlaid and hidden from the eyes of those who continued in the broad onward road in a downward right line from their source.” [\[254\]](#)

We, who live on this planet of atonement, who must live life after life in a quest to remove our numerous blemishes – are those who are not altogether beautiful. We are the straight line down from perfection. We are a lesser creation. Not originally made perfect, but we are given a path to perfection.

Human mythology is full of the immaculateness of Garden of Eden’s and the noble life lived within, but owing to some misguided notion, the Garden is destroyed and abandoned. The divine origination myth doesn’t imply that we were born perfect, but the universe was ... that we, the

children of imperfection, must strive to regain that what was at the beginning of Creation.

The spirit Zabdiel, in an earlier communication to the Rev. G. Vale Owen, also brought us the subject of the degradation of perfection, a quote I used in Chapter 46 about the origin of our species, is also pertinent here:

“Thus arose the different orders and species of animal and vegetable and mineral life, and also of human type and racial character. And these things being initiated, again the Divine Mind pronounced His general approval or, as our Bible has it, He found it to be ‘very good.’

But high as were those who were chief in this matter of creation, yet they were less than the Only Omnipotent and, as the work of ordering the universe was very great, and wide in extent, the imperfections of their work became magnified as they worked out; so that, to a single mind, and one of low degree, as is that of a man, those imperfections loomed vast and great. For it is not competent to one who is so small and undeveloped to be able to see both good and evil equally, but the evil is the easier seen to him, and the good too high and wonderful for him to grasp its meaning and power.” [\[255\]](#)

Hence, total perfection is left only to God. While the great Lords of Creation toiled under the direction of God, they could only perform as well as they could – slightly less than perfect.

But this may have always been in the mind of the Supreme Intelligence. Creating perfection implies sameness; infinite repetition could create a weakness that may appear within the span of eternity. Whereas continually improving diverse creatures, promotes a multitude of excellence – all supreme, and all slightly different.

Each human, possessing free-will, is at liberty to choose their own path to spiritual purity. Our handicap, born imperfect and ignorant, is also a wonderful gift. For we, unlike those created without flaws, can chart our own course toward perfection. And we have the ability to be perfect in ways not seen before.



Chapter 50 – Objective to Subjective to Sublime – Our Spiritual Journey.

The spirit Arnel explains that atoms are made up of ethereal matter vibrating and spiraling along different paths. Atoms in our physical world are created from elements which originated in the spirit realm. This ether (also named Universal Fluid, in Spiritist literature), is moved, directed, and guided by a force ... mind-waves from spirits.

Arnel tells the Rev. G. Vale Owen, how the atom, is created from etheric atoms, directed by the wills of spirits - this salient fact is the basis of all what we see on earth:

“Now this is the basic substance of which your planet is made. From what I have already said you will see that this substance is continuously correspondent to a spiritual energy directed upon it from the inner or higher realms. This being so, then it follows that the whole of the planet Earth, in all its parts and details, is also continuously engaged in displaying outwardly the effects of spiritual causes.” [\[256\]](#)

Hence, not only high spirits, the originators of our solar system and planets, are directing the physical appearance and state of earth, but the collective wills of billions of discarnate spirits and physical beings are constantly shaping the world by radiating thoughts flowing from their minds.

This is an important point, for we are told that when the earth has a majority of enlightened souls residing on our planet, only then can we truly become a planet of regeneration. Therefore, each one of us, plays a part in elevating this world to a superior level – a stage of beauty, truth, love, charity, and honesty.

Our collective mindset, along with our spirit guides above will affect the transition of our dense planet to a lighter vibrational state, more in harmony with other advanced planets. Wars, hate, and envy will become distant memories. Replaced by cooperation, love for nature, and fraternity amongst all people on earth.

Our current spiritual diversity on earth, has a wide range of souls, radiating thoughts of materialism, desires of accumulating even more, and other selfish emotions are mixed with higher emanations of love, fraternity, and care for our environment. The earth is a melting pot of light and dark desires. Each force attempting to influence the other – consciously and subconsciously.

This swirl of influences is a constant on earth and in the lower spirit spheres encircling our globe. Arnel tells us that even souls in the first three levels of heaven are exposed to thoughts and emotions ascending from the planetary surface.

Therefore, while our own thoughts influences our environment, they are not focused or in agreement. Diversity is allowed because all of us are granted free will. We can think and do as we wish.

But there are consequences to our actions, and through the resulting lessons we must experience, our character and mindset slowly purifies itself and our primitive desires fall off and are replaced by higher ideals.

But in the meantime, while the churning of emotions swirl around us, we really don't live in a world of our making, but in a world made for us.

The Source of all Free Will

Arnel explains to G. Vale Owen that at the center, is God. God is the fountainhead of all free will. Everything spreads out from Him to all of the lesser creatures. Who again comply with giving free will to souls under their command. Each successive layer of spirits outward from God's core, creates their own environment, by the exercise of their own choice.

Those closest to God, have the most range of free will and hence they themselves create their own kingdom along the lines of their desires. While those further out, also may create their own environments, but they are influenced by the creations of the spirits superior to them.

Hence, Arnel states that the environments of the higher beings are subjective (meaning conforming to their own frame of reference and wishes), while the amount of variation decreases as one descends down the ladder, where on the levels surrounding earth, the subjective becomes the objective – the environment appears more fixed, less dynamic, due to the

weak and conflicting influences of the spirits (incarnate and discarnate) upon their surroundings.

Arnel continues with his message:

“In Earth the environment is objective very greatly. As you rise in the spheres near and nearer to the Central Energy, Whom we call God, the environment becomes the more sublimated in substance. It is therefore the more easily molded into conformity with the wills of those who inhabit. So, I say, their environment becomes more and more subjective the higher we go. This is another way of saying these High Beings, because they absorb more of the environment into themselves become, *ipso facto*, the more universal. They compass within themselves more content of space, or being, or what other counter you will to use reckon them in their several degrees of power.

The Creator sums up, and includes within Himself, the whole of space, or being, and so becomes universally Subjective. He is His own environment. Considered from the innermost outward, this is Omnipresence and, inversely, it is Unity.” [\[257\]](#)

Therefore, the further one travels in distance from the source of all, the Central Energy, the more objective, the more fixed is the environment. Arnel finishes his description:

“On the planet Earth it is frankly material. In the region next in order above Earth it is less material and more ethereal; then it is ethereal; and then it is spiritual; and then it is spiritual but more sublime.” [\[258\]](#)

From Material to Ethereal to Spiritual to Sublime

Arnel has laid out what is in store for us in our quest to become a pure spirit. We exist in our school of earth, taking classes life after life – we bounce back between material to ethereal as we incarnate, die, emerge in the spirit world, incarnate again – for countless years.

When we are immature spirits we live in the spirit world still tied to the material ideas we had while in the physical life. Although the conditions are different, our thought patterns are locked into earthly ways. We do not understand the range of freedom we actually have; we are imprisoned into what we know and expect.

Arnel reinforces this lack of comprehension of a person coming to the spirit realm:

“But nearer the Earth the environment does seem, to those who have lately come over-much material, because they have not yet learned fully the great change which has come upon them as to their subjective state. The new state answers to their new environment so naturally that, until they begin to do things, they do not realize how responsive over that of earth is the basic substance of that sphere into which they be newly come. They do find it then, and full often with shock, like child and fire.” [\[259\]](#)

Eventually, we mature, we comprehend that in the spirit realm our thoughts have power. Once we humbly accept the light, we are trained how to exercise that power. We reach a spiritual plateau.

As we continue to grow and learn, we rise to levels unimaginable to us while we were sitting in our classes on earth. We begin to experience sublimity. We come closer to God. We can use our love to create worlds of our desires. We live where we wish to live, in an environment of our choosing; although still limited by the parameters set by God and spirits superior to us.

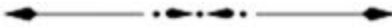
Your Life is as You Make It

There are many people who believe that the afterlife is all up to us. That we create the environment for ourselves that we desire. If one goes to a hellish place, then that is because of the fables and myths that that person absorbed and believed in. If one goes to a heavenly place, with clouds, harp music, and bright light everywhere, then again, that is solely due to preconceived ideas.

They are correct to a point. We do create the environment we live in, but only after eons of training. Upon death, we neither have the knowledge or skill to fully create an entire new world. Our minds are not developed or focused enough to filter out the pre-existing ideas which surround us. Hence, unbeknownst to us, we tend to journey where we are most comfortable with the ideals in which we identify. We conform to the environment; we don't realize by changing our outlook, we will either

change the environment or will rise to a new level where a majority of people believe and act like we do. This is the Law of Affinity.

Therefore, prepare yourself to where you wish to travel in the afterlife now. Think the thoughts that will allow you to be with people you wish to live amongst. Then, you can live in the part of heaven, you so desire, and from there, start the climb to wholly create your own paradise.



Chapter 51 – Useful Knowledge

Why is the spirit world telling us this? Why are they delving into the workings of the universe? How does this knowledge help us? It is all meant to open our eyes.

A medium sent a message to my wife. It was a suggestion for an intention to be used when she uses her rosary as a method for meditation. Embedded in the intention is the phrase, “Awaken my mind to the true nature of reality.” The medium told us her spirit mentors specifically gave that to my wife to use.

Thus, the answer is to awaken our minds to the true nature of reality. Once we understand the basis of all nature, all natural laws, and all rules of the universe ... our eyes are open to a different level of understanding. We see everything in a different light, a different context. We can begin to see the Supreme Divinity pervasive in all points of the compass – sea, land, air, stars, solar systems, galaxies, and universes.

Understanding the infusion of will, of God’s will, of a High Spirit’s will, and the will of our Christ – all in concert to create our little corner of one of the universes – to prepare us, to infuse vital concepts, so we may attain the next level.

Like a child learning to multiply before they are able to tackle algebra, we must learn that all what we see as matter, as natural laws, as the laws of Physics ... are actually rules put into place by powerful entities. Rules, processes, and procedures which exist to enable us to be shepherded ever onward.

As we attain new heights, we shall be able to formulate new axioms of life, instead of entirely responding to what other wills have put in place. We too, shall start spirals of evolution – which take on a path of a self-improving loop. Not a straight upward trajectory, but a winding road, which sometimes curves back on itself, but in reality sets the stage for an even stronger next transformation.

Comprehending the movement of the universe allows us to see our own life and our planet's history from a new perspective. It changes the paradigm that history and progress must be ever onward and causes us to realize the importance of what we have thought heretofore as detours. As avoidable human tragedies, but which are in reality, periods of healthy regrowth after surgical pruning.

Asteroids hitting the earth, ice ages, massive volcanic destructions, wars, conquests, and dark ages of humanity – are all part of the spiral of evolution. Each step planned to strengthen.

One day, as we sit upon a seat of great responsibility, commanding overwhelming forces, we may think of the perspective of the lives of the people down on the planet we are shaping; we may harken back to when we too, were on a planet of atonement, and the swirls of history made little sense to us. At that moment we shall have sympathy for the souls who had to travel through a hardening process. Unaware that each step in our plan for them involved propelling them to greater heights and well-being.

Hopefully, some souls will have read our messages about the true nature of reality and the world about them. They will understand the trials and tribulations are sent for their benefit; so that someday they too will be ready for great power. Power awaiting them, as a gift from God, High Lords, and Us.



Glossary.

Term	Description
Abyss or Dark Abyss	The Abyss begins just below the surface of the earth and extends downwards for an unspecified distance. This is the term for a type of Purgatory or Hell for

Term	Description
	spirits who are unrepentant and still intent on staying attached to worldly goods, baser emotions (such as hate, envy, and revenge), or other criminal intentions. There is no concept of eternal damnation in Spiritism; all spirits are able to leave when they change their character and beliefs. All will eventually rise to heaven, but it may take multiple lifetimes.
Allan Kardec	Known as the codifier of Spiritism. Many Brazilians believe he later reincarnated as Francisco (Chico) C. Xavier to carry on the presentation of Spiritism. His first book is <i>The Spirits Book</i> . He presented Spiritism to the world in the 1850s.
Andre Luiz	Spirit Author of a series of books, starting with <i>Nosso Lar</i> . All books were psychographed by Francisco (Chico) C. Xavier. Highly recommended reading for anyone interested in learning about Spiritism.
Camilo Branco	Camilo Castelo Branco wasn't just an ordinary suicide. He was a commanding figure in Portugal's literary scene in the late 1800's. He was known as the Portuguese Balzac and was awarded the title of Viscount of Correia Botelho. In despair over his son's insanity and his own ailments that would certainly lead to blindness, he ended his life in 1890.
Discarnate	A spirit in the spirit world, they do not possess a physical body.
Emmanuel	Emmanuel was the spirit mentor of Francisco (Chico) C. Xavier. Emmanuel has since incarnated in Brazil in the year 2001 or 2002. It is said by some Spiritist mediums that Chico Xavier, will be the spirit mentor for Emmanuel.
Errant spirit	I have seen two slightly different uses of "errant spirit", the most used one is a spirit who is wandering in the Lower Zone, between heaven and the Abyss. The other

Term	Description
	usage is when a spirit is not assigned a region, and is free to wander onto different spirit worlds (where there is no physical life).
Francisco (Chico) C. Xavier	A Brazilian medium, who psychographed more than 450 books, dictated to him by spirits. His spirit guide was Emmanuel. Chico Xavier was a Spiritist and did much to spread Spiritism throughout Brazil.
Heaven	Heaven, in Spiritist books, including mine, usually refers to the higher regions above the earth. There are different heavens around other planets for those souls who live there. Heaven is where people in physical bodies return to, if they have demonstrated love, kindness, fraternity, charity, and honesty toward their fellow humans. Being a member of any one type of religion or even a belief in God is not a requirement to ascend to heaven, according to Spiritism.
Hell	Called the “Abyss” or the “Dark Abyss” in the books by the spirit Andre Luiz
Incarnate	An incarnate is a spirit who inhabits a physical body. The spirit can still roam in the spirit world during time of sleep.
James	A high spirit, but one who advanced rapidly after his modest incarnation on earth, but spiritually very profound. He was rapidly advanced to sphere seven and given responsibility over the colony of the Glade. This is the colony composed of the souls rescued by Shonar after they were massacred by another faction. The colony resides on sphere four.
Jesus	According to Spiritism - Jesus is the governor of Earth. It has been reported by Brazilian Spiritist that Jesus is also in charge of four other planets, one in the forming stage, one primitive, one a planet of atonement (Earth), one a planet of regeneration, and one a happy planet.

Term	Description
Levels of Heaven	As Jesus said in the New Testament, “My mansion has many rooms”, there are many levels of heaven. As one increases their spiritual and intellectual ability one graduates from a lower level to the next higher level. In the book, <i>Beyond the Veil</i> , a numbering system is used. Level 1 being the lowest. Spirits have said they are using that system just for convenience sake, as a tool to explain the demarcations of heaven for us here on earth.
Lower Zone	Also called the Umbral in Portuguese, which you may find in some of the English translations of Chico Xavier’s book. The Lower Zone is the area at the surface of the earth and slightly above it where spirits who haven’t yet released their ties to material goods on earth and/or have not yet accepted the need for love and fraternity toward all humans. All will eventually rise to heaven, but it may take multiple lifetimes.
NDE	Near Death Experience – People who have had NDEs are those whose were close to or in an actual death state.
Nosso Lar	The first book dictated to Francisco (Chico) C. Xavier by the spirit Andre Luiz. A movie was made using the first book (of the same name) by the spirit author Andre Luiz. It is called <i>Nosso Lar</i> , or <i>Celestial City</i> . The movie is in Portuguese with English subtitles. I highly recommend this movie, excellent production values and true to the Doctrine of Spiritism.
OBE	Out of Body Experience – This includes people who were not classified as being in a near or at a state of death, but still were transported into another plane.
Perispirit	Connects the spirit to the physical body. You are composed to three key items – Your spirit (which is immortal), perispirit (which is the link between the

Term	Description
	spirit and the physical body), and your physical body (which is mortal and will be destroyed after each life).
Reincarnation	Reincarnation is the concept whereby a spirit, the entire personality and character, is deposited into a physical body. According to Spiritism, when a spirit is placed inside a physical body, they retain their basic character (which gets revealed around the age of 15 to 18), but they do not have any memories of past lives. This is for the purpose of allowing that spirit to learn the lessons assigned to them. Incarnates (spirits in physical bodies) do retain their conscience – the mechanism to determine right from wrong – and their instinct. Once a spirit sheds their physical body, at the proper time their memories return.
Rev. G. Vale Owen	An English Rev. in the Anglican Church. He received messages from the spirit realm in the 1910s and 20s. Four of his books are in the compilation book, <i>Beyond the Veil</i>
Shonar	A high spirit. He works in the Lower Zone, helping souls who have not yet found the path to heaven and has been incarnated on earth for vital missions. “He has many centuries of service to his name and has been especially active during eras of disturbance and revolution on Earth – as, for example, in the reign of Ivan the Terrible in Russia, during the French Revolution, and in the time of Henry VIII of England.” [260]
Spirit / Soul	I use the word interchangeably – but I do realize that many do not. For simplicity sake I use spirit to denote all of us, we all have or are spirits and we all have a soul. For those not on a physical plane I will put either their name or put “spirit” before their name to denote they currently reside in the spirit world.

Term	Description
Spirit World, Spirit Realm	The spirit world was created before our physical universe. We come from and shall return to the spirit realm. The world of spirits is where we shall spend the vast majority of our eternal life.
Spiritism, Christian Spiritism	A Doctrine codified by Allan Kardec in the 1850s, revealed to the world by the Spirit of Truth, as promised in the New Testament (John 14:15-17, 26). Spiritism follows the precepts of Christianity and updates them with new revelations from the spirit world.
Umbral	Also called the Lower Zone in English. The Lower Zone is the area at the surface of the earth and slightly above it where spirits who haven't yet released their ties to material goods on earth and/or have not yet accepted the need for love and fraternity toward all humans. All will eventually rise to heaven, but it may take multiple lifetimes.
Universal Fluid	From this, flows all forms of matter. It is the basis for everything in the spirit and physical universes.
Wulfhere	A high spirit. Mother of Shonar in one of his incarnations. They are still close. She was in charge of a group of workers in sphere seven. She is very intelligent and has a strong personality, but and sweet and caring woman.
Yvonne Pereira	A Brazilian medium who psychographed books from spirits. She has many books published in Portuguese. Presently there are two books translated in English

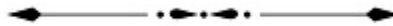
Your Exploration Continues . . .

Learn more about Spiritism in my blog at: <http://www.nwspiritism.com>.

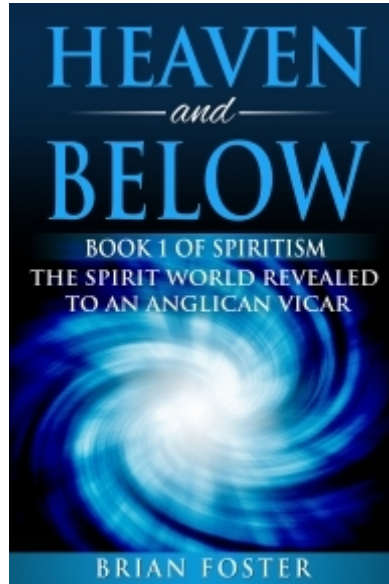
To assist you in understanding more about Spiritism, I have eleven other books to support you in your spiritual exploration:

- Heaven and Below – Book 1 of Spiritism - The Spirit World Revealed to a Anglican Vicar
- How we are Guided by Spirits – Book 3 of Spiritism - The Spirit World Revealed to a Anglican Vicar
- Spiritism 101 – The Third Revelation
- The Spirit World Talks to Us
- 7 Tenets of Spiritism – How They Impact Your Daily Life
- Explore Your Destiny – Since Your Life's Path is (mostly) Predetermined
- The Case for Reincarnation – Your Path to Perfection
- 51 Disclosures from Spiritism – The 3rd Revelation
- What Really Happens During Near Death Experiences According to Spiritism – 12 NDEs Explained and Explored
- The Problem is the Solution
- Spiritism - Everything is Connected

Below are brief introductions to all my books concerning Spiritism.



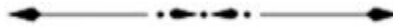
Heaven and Below – Book 1



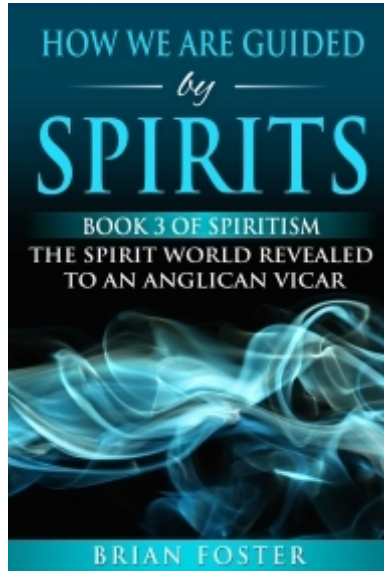
This book covers communications that pertain to three main themes:

- Life in heaven
- Lower regions
- Appearances of Jesus in the spirit realm

Many religions offer pictures of life after our spirit leaves our physical body. Most descriptions are hazy and prone to numerous interpretations. Spiritism, via communication from spirits who have been selected by high-level spirits, supplies us with real and actionable knowledge. Revelations in Spiritist literature presents an exciting picture of the bands of heaven and life therein. While a fuller explanation is extended about aspects of life and the organization of the regions below heaven.



How we are Guided by Spirits – Book 3



This book covers communications to the Rev. G. Vale Owen that pertain to three main themes:

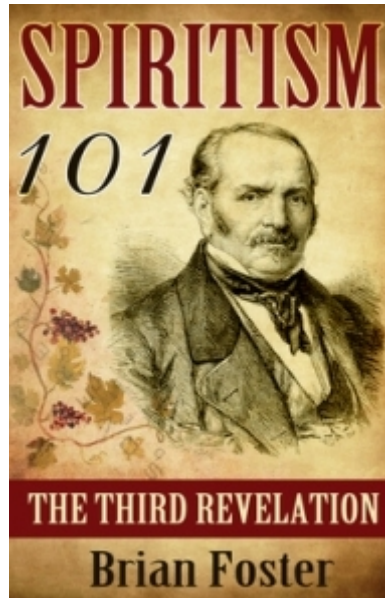
- Guiding humans on earth
- Spirit assistance
- Future events

Book 3 illustrates the ground game of the spirit world. Via the messages of multiple spirits to the Rev. G. Vale Owen we are presented examples of how the spirit realm above us peers down upon their unruly students. The process of tracking and modifying behavior on an individual and a collective basis is revealed. Even the broader direction of human society in the future is posted for all to see.

How we are Guided by Spirits – Book 3 of Spiritism – The Spirit World Revealed to an Anglican Vicar



Spiritism 101 – The Third Revelation

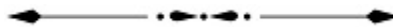


Something wonderful has happened. It occurred in the middle of the 1800's and it caught the attention of the world. It grew quickly in popularity, so fast that many in positions of power went on a crusade to stamp it out.

Why? Because it provided answers to questions that we all have been searching for. Questions that have been posed by philosophers since the beginning of time were asked and the results fully described.

Like other messages of love, charity and fraternity before; this one was met with strong opposition. Ideas are hard to stamp out and this one is growing again. The world is re-awakening to Spiritism.

Learn what Spiritism is and how it can positively shape your life and happiness. Available at Amazon Kindle for \$0.99, and in paperback - [*Spiritism 101 – The Third Revelation*](#)



The Spirit World Talks to Us

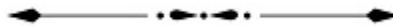


The spirit world is talking to us ... each and every one of us. Most of us are unaware of the subtle signals and soft voices that draw us to listen to our conscience. But they are there, ever hopeful that we may discover the truth about our sojourn on this blue planet.

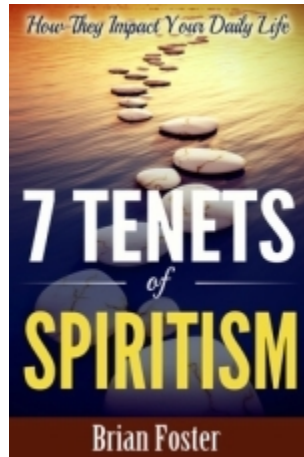
The experiences reviewed in this book layout exciting disclosures about the spirit world and ours. We are told about heaven, the different spiritual zones around the earth; how karma is real and why we need multiple lives to learn to become a person who radiates love in all circumstances. We learn that the concept of time is different in the spirit universe and about the basic building blocks of all matter.

In essence, the inquiries that you have had since you began questioning your place in this universe are answered by spirits interacting with the chosen few.

Learn what the spirit world is telling us. – [The Spirit World Talks to Us.](#)



7 Tenets of Spiritism – How They Impact Your Daily Life

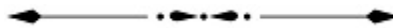


I explore each of the seven tenets and how they have personally affected me and those around me. Giving yourself the seven tenets could be the best present of your life.

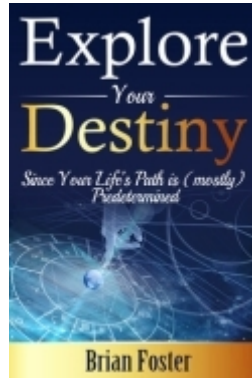
The 7 Tenets of Spiritism:

1. We are Immortal Souls
2. God and Jesus Love Us
3. We have Multiple Lives
4. During our Lives We Pay for Past Debts and Accumulate New Experiences
5. We Live and Learn in Close Family Groups
6. Our Destiny is Mostly Predetermined
7. We are Assisted in our Lives by Unseen Spirit Forces

Available at Amazon Kindle and in paperback, at [7 Tenets of Spiritism – How They Impact Your Daily Life](#).



Explore Your Destiny – Since Your Life’s Path is (mostly) Predetermined



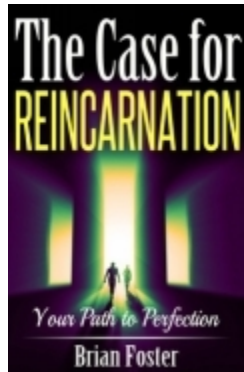
Explore Your Destiny is divided into four sections. Each section supplies one more piece of the puzzle for you to place, so you can look at your life’s arc with new insights.

1. Why – Why are we here and why must we live what we are living through right now?
2. When – In what period along your souls timeline is all of this happening? Knowing your relative position in the path to perfection will guide you to understanding your current life.
3. How – How does all of this occur? How does the entire process affect your destiny and actions? What are the rules of the game?
4. Where – Where is this world that plans our destiny? Are there good places to be and are there bad?

[Explore Your Destiny – Since Your Life’s Path is \(mostly\) Predetermined](#).



The Case for Reincarnation – Your Path to Perfection

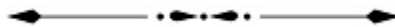


There is a realm, a universe greater than ours and it is filled with intelligences that we can only wonder at. There are spirits around the earth who are actively helping and guiding us in our planning and during our actual incarnations.

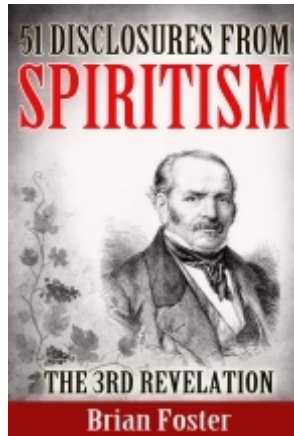
This book is here to answer your questions;

1. Why do we reincarnate?
2. How does the process work?
3. How many reincarnations must we have?
4. What memories do we retain from our previous lives?
5. Do we have control over our reincarnations?
6. Why must we suffer?
7. How may I insure my next life is better?
8. How may I progress to being a perfected spirit?

[The Case for Reincarnation – Your Path to Perfection](#)



51 Disclosures from Spiritism – The 3rd Revelation

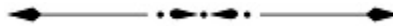


Spiritism has been presented to humankind for one reason, to enlighten us. To let us know the answers to questions that everyone has had since we started thinking about our place on earth, our destiny, why we are here, and is there life after death.

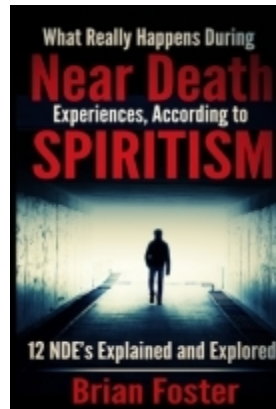
This book is divided into four sections, each categorizing a theme for the type of discoveries that you will make as you read:

1. Ourselves – What are we, why are we here, what do we have to do, what is our goal?
2. Spirit Realm – What is it, where is it, how does it work?
3. How to Ascend – What is the path to ascension, what is important to learn, why we must grow?
4. Prophecies – What do some past prophecies actually mean, what will happen to the world, how will it happen?

Learn what has been presented to the world, read the book, [51 Disclosures from Spiritism – The 3rd Revelation](#).



What Really Happens During Near Death Experiences, According to Spiritism

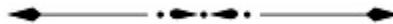


Why are we interested in Near Death Experiences (NDE)? With the advent of the internet, social media allows masses of people to more efficiently pool together shared experiences than at any other time in history.

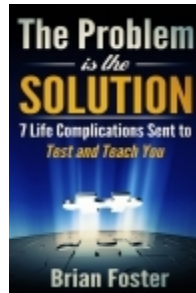
Recollections from every country, culture, language and age group now reside in the great internet cloud. A mountain of data, which can no longer be wished away or ignored. The parallels and common themes from all corners of the world preclude everyone's account to be merely mass hysteria.

Spiritism explains why each person was chosen for their experience and what was presented to them. Find out what they were expected to learn from their life changing event.

[What Really Happens During Near Death Experiences – 12 NDEs Explained and Explored is available at Amazon.](#)



The Problem is the Solution



This book is different. Not that the others are bad or useless. Just that this book is different. It rests on an altered premise; life is a planned series of trials.

In this book you will learn to analyze why you are experiencing, or have been through, the following types of events:

1. Financial problems
2. Failed relationship(s) / marriage(s)
3. Family problems
4. Illnesses – physical and mental
5. Career setbacks
6. Addiction
7. Stress

And in doing so, you shall be able to make the first step in analyzing what you should have learned and how it will make you a better person.

The Problem is the Solution – 7 Life Complications Sent to Test and Teach You



Spiritism – Everything is Connected

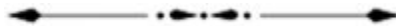


This book presents information about Spiritism and how our lives are tethered to the spirit world and everyone else on this planet. I have divided my essays into three categories:

- What is Spiritism
- How the Spirit World Guides the Earth
- How the Spirit Realm Assists Us

All are interrelated. There are no hard dividing lines where our lives are unaffected by spirits around us. We literally walk in a sea of spirits. We hear and are unconsciously directed by suggestions from spirits. All types of spirits. Good, bad, indifferent, and foolish spirits.

Spiritism – Everything is Connected



Author

Stay in touch with the author via:

Spiritist Blog: <http://www.nwspiritism.com>

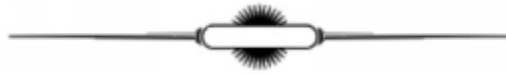
Facebook: <https://www.facebook.com/nwspiritism>

Facebook group to discuss Spiritism:
<https://www.facebook.com/groups/Spiritist/>

Twitter: <https://twitter.com/nwspiritism>

Author page on Amazon: <https://www.amazon.com/Brian-Foster/e/B00O6JBO0G>

If you liked *Spirits and the Spirit Universe – Book 2* , please post a review at Amazon.



Copyright

This ebook is licensed for your personal enjoyment only. This ebook may not be re-sold or given away to other people. If you like to share this book with another person, please purchase an additional copy for each person you share it with.

Copyright © 2017 Brian Foster . All rights reserved. Including the right to reproduce this book or portions thereof, in any form. No part of this text may be reproduced in any form without the express written permission of the author.

Version 2017.08.26.01



Bibliography

7th US Spiritist Symposium. (2015, August 2). *7th U.S. Spiritist Symposium - The Truth About Medium* by Gary Schwartz, PhD . Retrieved from YouTube: https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=_u7RqklxNnA

Amazon. (2014, May 14). *The Spirits Book* . Retrieved from Amazon Books: http://www.amazon.com/Spirits-Book-Spiritualist-Classics/dp/1907355987/ref=sr_1_1?s=books&ie=UTF8&qid=1399825900&sr=1-1&keywords=allan+kardec

Augustine, S. (2014). *The City of God*. Beloved Publishing.

Baker, M. M. (2016, July 15). *The Life of Jesus* . Retrieved from The Life of Jesus: <https://lifeofjesus.wordpress.com>

Bancarz, S. (2015, August 2). *Harvard Neurosurgeon Confirms The Afterlife Exists* . Retrieved from Spirit Science and Metaphysics: <http://www.spiritscienceandmetaphysics.com/harvard-neurosurgeon-confirms-the-afterlife-exists/>

Cayce, E. E. (1968). *Edgar Cayce On Atlantis*. New York: Grand Central Publishing.

Christian Spiritualism. (2015, September 14). *The Life Beyond the Veil* . Retrieved from Christian Spiritualism: <http://www.christianspiritualism.org/articles/lbtv.htm>

Denis, L. (2012). *Life and Destiny*. Forgotten Books.

Dictionary.com. (2014, 03 02). *Dictionary Reference* . Retrieved from Dictionary.com: <http://dictionary.reference.com/browse/didactic>

Dictionary.com. (2015, May 22). *Dictionary.reference.com/obsession* . Retrieved from Dictionary.com: <http://dictionary.reference.com/browse/obsession>

Dryden, S. H. (1909). *Daisy Dryden - A Memoir*. Boston: Colonial Press.

EVFIT. (2014, December 22). *40,000 Years* . Retrieved from evfit.com: <http://www.evfit.com/40,000ya.htm>

Franco, D. (2016). *Planetary Transition*. Miami, Florida: Leal Publisher.

Franco, D. P. (unknown). *Understanding Spiritual and Mental Health*. unknown: unknown.

Honório, T. S. (2015, June 13). *Spiritual Contracts* . Retrieved from Kardec: <http://www.kardec.com/Spiritual-Contracts.html>

Hooper, R. (2007, 2012). *Jesus, Buddha, Krishna & Lao Tzu*. New York: Bristol Park Books.

Jungian Center. (2015, July 3). *Art of Dying Well - Jungian Perspective of Death and Dying* . Retrieved from Jungian Center: <http://jungiancenter.org/essay/art-dying-well-jungian-perspective-death-and-dying>

Kardec, A. (2006). *Heaven and Hell*. Brasilia (DF), Brasil: International Spiritist Council.

Kardec, A. (2008). *The Gospel According to Spiritism*. Brasilia (DF): International Spiritist Council.

Kardec, A. (2009). *Genesis - Miracles and Predictions according to Spiritism*. Brasilia (DF), Brasil: International Spiritist Council.

Kardec, A. (2010). *The Book on Mediums*. Guildford, England: White Crow Books.

Kardec, A. (2010). *The Spirits Book*. Guildford, UK: White Crow Books.

Kardec, A. (2015). *Spiritist Review, Journal of Psychological Studies - 1858*. United States Spiritist Council and IPEAK.

Kardec, A. (2015). *The Spiritist Review - Journal of Psychological Review - 1859*. United States Spiritist Council and the Spiritist Research Institute (IPEAK).

Katsman, D. A. (2015, June 28). *PHYSICAL MODEL OF THE PARALLEL ETHEREAL WORLD* . Retrieved from The Campaign for Philosophical Freedom: <http://www.cfpf.org.uk/articles/rdp/physicalmodel.html>

Limite, D. (2017, January 17). *Data Limite Segundo Chico Xavier* . Retrieved from YouTube: <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=4JxukHvGVzE>

Live Science. (2015, July 10). *Japan 2011 Earthquake Tsunami Facts* . Retrieved from Live Science: <http://www.livescience.com/39110->

japan-2011-earthquake-tsunami-facts.html

MIT. (2016, April 14). *Plato's Republic Book VII* . Retrieved from Classics MIT: <http://classics.mit.edu/Plato/republic.8.vii.html>

Neto, G. L. (2013, June 15). *Remembering Chico Xavier and His Legacy* . Retrieved from YouTube: <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=wY5m3bk0AsY&list=TL01TkXUPh4dbuxLuFJq7Gmn-QZpLdKa5H>

Owen, R. G. (1971). *The Outlands of Heaven*. London: The Greater World Association Trust.

Owen, R. G. (2012). *The Life Beyond the Veil*. Pahrump, NV: Square Circles Publishing.

Pereira, Y. A. (2012). *Memoirs of a Suicide*. Brasilia (DF), Brasil: International Spiritist Council (EDICEI).

Schwartz, D. G. (2015, August 2). *Dr. Gary Schwartz* . Retrieved from Demonstrations: <http://www.drgaryschwartz.com/DEMONSTRATIONS.html>

Spiritism. (n.d.). *Wikipedia - Spiritism* . Retrieved September 18, 2014, from Wikipedia: <http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Spiritism>

Stanford Encyclopedia of Philosophy. (2015, August 8). *Descartes and the Pineal Gland* . Retrieved from Stanford Encyclopedia of Philosophy: <http://plato.stanford.edu/entries/pineal-gland/#3.2>

Steere, E. K. (2014, Oct. 6). *Research into Near Death Experiences Reveals Awareness May Continue even After the Brain Shutrs Down* . Retrieved from Daily Mail: <http://www.dailymail.co.uk/health/article-2783030/Research-near-death-experiences-reveals-awareness-continue-brain-shut-down.html>

Swedenborg, E. (1758). *Heaven and Hell*. Europe: A Public Domain Book.

Swedenborg, E. (2011). *A Swedenborg Sampler*. West Chester, PA: Swedenborg Foundation Press.

Unknown. (2017, January 23). *Channeled Messages from the Apostle Paul* . Retrieved from Channeled Messages from the Apostle Paul:

<http://messagesfromapostlepaul.zohosites.com/>

Urantia Foundation. (1975). *The Urantia Book*. Chicago: Urantia Foundation.

Vale Owen, G. (1924). *Paul and Albert*. London: The Greater World Christian Spiritualist Association.

Wikipedia. (2014, March 7). *Chico Xavier* . Retrieved from Wikipedia: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Chico_Xavier

Wikipedia. (2014, August 5). *Socrates* . Retrieved from Wikipedia: <http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Socrates>

Wikipedia. (2015, July 3). *Carl Jung* . Retrieved from Wikipedia: https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Carl_Jung#Thought

Wikipedia. (2015, August 8). *Descartes* . Retrieved from Wikipedia - Rene Descartes: https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Ren%C3%A9_Descartes

Wikipedia. (2015, October 15). *DNA* . Retrieved from Wikipedia: <https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/DNA>

Wikipedia. (2015, August 2). *Dr. Gary Schwartz* . Retrieved from Wikipedia: https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Gary_Schwartz

Wikipedia. (2015, July 3). *Genetic Memory* . Retrieved from Wikipedia: [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Genetic_memory_\(psychology\)](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Genetic_memory_(psychology))

Wikipedia. (2015, September 13). *George Vale Owen* . Retrieved from Wikipedia: https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/George_Vale_Owen

Wikipedia. (2015, August 8). *Joan of Arc* . Retrieved from Wikipedia: https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Joan_of_Arc

Wikipedia. (2016, April 14). *Allegory of the Cave* . Retrieved from Wikipedia: https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Allegory_of_the_Cave

Wikipedia. (2016, March 20). *Fourth Dimensional Space* . Retrieved from Wikipedia: https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Four-dimensional_space

Wikipedia. (2016, Jan. 31). *String Theory* . Retrieved from Wikipedia: https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/String_theory

Wikipedia. (2016, June 26). *Zoroastrianism* . Retrieved from Wikipedia: <https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Zoroastrianism>

Wikipedia. (2017, June 24). *French Revolution* . Retrieved from Wikipedia: https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/French_Revolution

Wikipedia. (2017, April 22). *St Crispin's Day Speech* . Retrieved from Wikipedia: https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/St_Crispin%27s_Day_Speech

Woolworth, T. (2011, February 6). *Thomas Edison's Telephone to the Dead: Myth or Fact?* Retrieved Sept. 20, 2014, from ITC Voices: <http://itcvoices.org/thomas-edisons-telephone-to-the-dead-myth-or-fact/>

Xavier, F. C. (1946). *Message from a Teen in the Spirit World*. Pedro Leopoldo, Brazil: International Spiritist Council.

Xavier, F. C. (2004). *In the Domain of Mediumship*. New York: Spiritist Alliance of Books, Inc.

Xavier, F. C. (2008). *The Messengers*. Philadelphia, PA: Allan Kardec Educational Society.

Xavier, F. C. (2008). *Workers of the Life Eternal*. Brasilia (DF) - Brazil: International Spiritist Council.

Xavier, F. C. (2009). *And Life Goes On*. Brasilia (DF), Brasil: International Spiritist Council.

Xavier, F. C. (2009). *In the Greater World*. Brasilia (DF), Brazil: International Spiritist Council.

Xavier, F. C. (2009). *Jesus in the Home*. Brasilia (DF), Brazil: EDICEI.

Xavier, F. C. (2009). *Missionaries of the Light*. Brasilia (DF), Brazil: International Spiritist Council.

Xavier, F. C. (2010). *Action and Reaction*. Brasilia (DF), Brazil: International Spiritist Council.

Xavier, F. C. (2010). *Nosso Lar*. Brasilia - (DF), Brazil: International Spiritist Council.

Xavier, F. C. (2010). *Our Daily Bread*. Brasilia (DF) - Brazil: EDICEI.

Xavier, F. C. (2011). *Between Heaven and Earth*. Brasilia (DF), Brazil: International Spiritist Council.

Xavier, F. C. (2011). *In the Realms of Mediumship*. Brasilia (DF), Brazil: EDICEI.

Xavier, F. C. (2011). *On the Way to the Light*. Brasilia (DF), Brazil: International Spiritist Council.

Xavier, F. C. (2012). *Hail Christ!* Brasilia (DF): EDICEI.

Xavier, F. C. (2013). *Liberation*. Brasilia (DF), Brazil: International Spiritist Council.

Xavier, F. C. (2013). *Sex and Destiny*. Miami, FL: EDICEI of America.

Xavier, F. C. (2013). *Voltei*. Brasilia (DF): FEB.

Xavier, F. C., & Pires, J. H. (2015). *Spiritual Wisdom: Missives of Hope*. New York: Spiritist Alliance for Books (SAB).

[1] Xavier, F. C., *Voltei*, EDICEI, p. 178

[2] Wikipedia, "George Vale Owen", n.d., https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/George_Vale_Owen, (accessed September 13, 2015)

[3] Christian Spiritualism, "Life Beyond the Veil", n.d., <http://www.christianspiritualism.org/articles/lbtv.htm>, (accessed September 14, 2015)

[4] Christian Spiritualism, "Life Beyond the Veil", n.d., <http://www.christianspiritualism.org/articles/lbtv.htm>, (accessed September 14, 2015)

[5] Christian Spiritualism, "Life Beyond the Veil", n.d., <http://www.christianspiritualism.org/articles/lbtv.htm>, (accessed September 14, 2015)

[6] Christian Spiritualism, “Life Beyond the Veil”, n.d., <http://www.christianspiritualism.org/articles/lbtv.htm>, (accessed September 14, 2015)

[7] Owner, G. Vale, The Life Beyond the Veil, Square Circles Publishing, p. 4

[8] Owner, G. Vale, The Life Beyond the Veil, Square Circles Publishing, p. 33

[9] Owner, G. Vale, The Life Beyond the Veil, Square Circles Publishing, pp. lii-1iii

[10] Owner, G. Vale, The Life Beyond the Veil, Square Circles Publishing, pp. 178-179

[11] Owner, G. Vale, The Life Beyond the Veil, Square Circles Publishing, p. 262

[12] Christian Spiritualism, “Life Beyond the Veil”, n.d., <http://www.christianspiritualism.org/articles/lbtv.htm>, (accessed September 14, 2015)

[13] Christian Spiritualism, “Life Beyond the Veil”, n.d., <http://www.christianspiritualism.org/articles/lbtv.htm>, (accessed September 14, 2015)

[14] Owner, G. Vale, The Life Beyond the Veil, Square Circles Publishing, pp. xliv-xlv

[15] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 28

[16] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, pp. 28-29

[17] Xavier, Francisco C., Nosso Lar, EDICEI, p. 272

[18] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, pp. 29-30

[19] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 32

[20] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 33

[21] Xavier, Francisco C., In the Realms of Mediumship, EDICEI, p. 97

[22] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 34

[23] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 53

[24] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, pp. 53-54

[25] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 54

[26] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 56

[27] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 56

[28] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, pp. 56-57

- [29] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, pp. 58-59
- [30] Xavier, Francisco C., In the Realms of Mediumship, EDICEI, p. 9
- [31] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 60
- [32] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 61
- [33] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 63
- [34] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, pp. 63-64
- [35] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, pp. 64-65
- [36] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 431
- [37] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, pp. 431-432
- [38] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 432
- [39] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 433
- [40] Owen, G. Vale, The Outlands of Heaven, The Greater World Association Trust, pp. 155-156
- [41] Owen, G. Vale, The Outlands of Heaven, The Greater World Association Trust, p. 157
- [42] Xavier, F. C., Nosso Lar, EDICEI, pp. 97-98
- [43] Owen, G. Vale, The Outlands of Heaven, The Greater World Association Trust, p. 158
- [44] Owen, G. Vale, The Outlands of Heaven, The Greater World Association Trust, p. 158
- [45] Owen, G. Vale, The Outlands of Heaven, The Greater World Association Trust, p. 165
- [46] Owen, G. Vale, The Life Beyond the Veil, Square Circles Publishing, p. 232
- [47] Owen, G. Vale, The Life Beyond the Veil, Square Circles Publishing, pp. 232-233
- [48] Owen, G. Vale, The Outlands of Heaven, Greater World Association Trust, pp. 37-39
- [49] Owen, G. Vale, The Outlands of Heaven, Greater World Association Trust, p. 39
- [50] Owen, G. Vale, The Outlands of Heaven, Greater World Association Trust, pp. 40-43
- [51] Owen, G. Vale, The Outlands of Heaven, Greater World Association Trust, p. 43
- [52] Owen, G. Vale, The Outlands of Heaven, Greater World Association Trust, p. 44

- [\[53\]](#) Pereira, Y. A., *Memoirs of a Suicide*, EDICEI, pp. 447-448
- [\[54\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, *The Outlands of Heaven*, Greater World Association Trust, pp. 44-45
- [\[55\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, *The Outlands of Heaven*, Greater World Association Trust, p. 57
- [\[56\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, *The Outlands of Heaven*, Greater World Association Trust, pp. 58-59
- [\[57\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, *The Outlands of Heaven*, Greater World Association Trust, p. 60
- [\[58\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, *The Outlands of Heaven*, Greater World Association Trust, p. 62
- [\[59\]](#) Xavier, F.C., *Nosso Lar*, EDICEI, p. 299
- [\[60\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, *The Outlands of Heaven*, Greater World Association Trust, pp. 62-63
- [\[61\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, *The Outlands of Heaven*, Greater World Association Trust, p. 63
- [\[62\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, *The Outlands of Heaven*, Greater World Association Trust, p. 65
- [\[63\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, *The Outlands of Heaven*, Greater World Association Trust, p. 66
- [\[64\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, *The Outlands of Heaven*, Greater World Association Trust, p. 68
- [\[65\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, *The Outlands of Heaven*, Greater World Association Trust, p. 68
- [\[66\]](#) Xavier, Francisco C., *Missionaries of the Light*, EDICEI, p. 54
- [\[67\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, *The Outlands of Heaven*, Greater World Association Trust, pp. 69-70
- [\[68\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, *The Outlands of Heaven*, Greater World Association Trust, pp. 70-71
- [\[69\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, *The Life Beyond the Veil*, Square Circles Publishing, p. 233
- [\[70\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, *The Life Beyond the Veil*, Square Circles Publishing, p. 233
- [\[71\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, *The Life Beyond the Veil*, Square Circles Publishing, p. 233

- [72] Owen, G. Vale, The Life Beyond the Veil, Square Circles Publishing, p. 262
- [73] Owen, G. Vale, The Life Beyond the Veil, Square Circles Publishing, p. 263
- [74] Xavier, F.C. Nosso Lar, EDICEI, p 80
- [75] Xavier, F.C. Nosso Lar, EDICEI, p 132
- [76] Owen, G. Vale, The Life Beyond the Veil, Square Circles Publishing, pp. 263-264
- [77] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, pp. 113-114
- [78] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 277
- [79] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, pp. 518-519
- [80] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 519
- [81] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 520
- [82] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 520
- [83] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, pp. 520-521
- [84] XAVIER, Francisco C. On the Way to the Light, EDICEI, pp. 25-26
- [85] Kardec, A, Genesis – Miracles and Predictions according to Spiritism, EDICEI, p. 224
- [86] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 524
- [87] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 525
- [88] Owen, R. G., Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 535
- [89] Owen, R. G., Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 535
- [90] Owen, R. G., Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 536
- [91] Owen, R. G., Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 537
- [92] Owen, G. Vale, The Life Beyond the Veil, Square Circles Publishing, pp. 551-552
- [93] Owen, G. Vale, The Life Beyond the Veil, Square Circles Publishing, p. 552
- [94] Owen, G. Vale, The Life Beyond the Veil, Square Circles Publishing, p. 553
- [95] KARDEC, Allan. The Gospel According to Spiritism, EDICEI, Chap. 3 num. 8, p 72
- [96] KARDEC, Allan. The Gospel According to Spiritism, EDICEI, Chap. 3 num. 8, p 73

[\[97\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, The Life Beyond the Veil, Square Circles Publishing, p. 554

[\[98\]](#) Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 18

[\[99\]](#) Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 18

[\[100\]](#) Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 25

[\[101\]](#) Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 25

[\[102\]](#) Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 26

[\[103\]](#) Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, pp. 36-37

[\[104\]](#) Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 37

[\[105\]](#) Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 37

[\[106\]](#) Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, pp. 37-38

[\[107\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, The Outlands of Heaven, The Greater World Association Trust, pp. 156-157

[\[108\]](#) Xavier, F.C., Nosso Lar, EDICEI, p. 299

[\[109\]](#) Franco, D., Planetary Transition, Leal Publisher, p. 75

[\[110\]](#) Franco, D., Planetary Transition, Leal Publisher, p. 143

[\[111\]](#) Pereira, Y. A., Memoirs of a Suicide, EDICEI, p. 455

[\[112\]](#) Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 156

[\[113\]](#) Kardec, Allan, The Spirits Book, White Crow Publishing, p.210

[\[114\]](#) Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 157

[\[115\]](#) Kardec, A., The Gospel According to Spiritism, EDICEI, p. 87

[\[116\]](#) Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 164

[\[117\]](#) Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 164

[\[118\]](#) Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, pp. 164-165

[\[119\]](#) Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 165

[\[120\]](#) Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 527

[\[121\]](#) Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, pp. 527-528

[\[122\]](#) Owen R. G. The Outlands of Heaven, The Greater World Trust, p. 17

[\[123\]](#) Xavier, F. C., Nosso Lar, EDICEI, p. 56

[\[124\]](#) Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 412

[\[125\]](#) Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, pp. 412-413

- [126] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 413
- [127] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 413
- [128] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 49
- [129] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 50
- [130] Xavier, Francisco C., Workers of the Life Eternal, EDICEI, p. 50
- [131] Budge, E. A. Wallis, Egyptian Magic, Cosimo, p. 157
- [132] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 66
- [133] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, pp. 66-67
- [134] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 67
- [135] Xavier, Francisco C. On the Way to the Light, EDICEI, pp. 21-22
- [136] Xavier, Francisco C. In the Realms of Mediumship, EDICEI, p. 247
- [137] Xavier, Francisco C. In the Realms of Mediumship, EDICEI, p. 247
- [138] Owen, R. G. The Life Beyond the Veil, Square Circles Publishing, p. 257
- [139] Owen, R. G. The Life Beyond the Veil, Square Circles Publishing, p. 257
- [140] Kardec, Allan, The Spirits Book, White Crow Books, p. 111
- [141] Kardec, Allan, The Spirits Book, White Crow Books, p. 112
- [142] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 171
- [143] Xavier, Francisco C. Workers of the Life Eternal, EDICEI, p. 48
- [144] Xavier, Francisco C. Workers of the Life Eternal, EDICEI, p. 48
- [145] Xavier, Francisco C. Workers of the Life Eternal, EDICEI, p. 54
- [146] Xavier, Francisco C. Workers of the Life Eternal, EDICEI, p. 61
- [147] Xavier, Francisco C. Workers of the Life Eternal, EDICEI, p. 63
- [148] Xavier, Francisco C. Workers of the Life Eternal, EDICEI, p. 54
- [149] Xavier, Francisco C. Workers of the Life Eternal, EDICEI, p. 59
- [150] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 171
- [151] Owen, G. Vale, The Life Beyond the Veil, Square Circles Publishing, p. 213
- [152] Owen, G. Vale, The Life Beyond the Veil, Square Circles Publishing, p. 213
- [153] Kardec, Allan, The Spirits Book, White Crow Books, p.68
- [154] Kardec, Allan, The Spirits Book, White Crow Books, p.70
- [155] Owen, G. Vale, The Life Beyond the Veil, Square Circles Publishing, p. 214

- [\[156\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, *The Life Beyond the Veil*, Square Circles Publishing, p. 215
- [\[157\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, *The Life Beyond the Veil*, Square Circles Publishing, p. 214
- [\[158\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, *The Life Beyond the Veil*, Square Circles Publishing, pp. 214-215
- [\[159\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, *The Life Beyond the Veil*, Square Circles Publishing, p. 215
- [\[160\]](#) Owen R. G. *Life Beyond the Veil*, Squares Circles Publishing, pp. 218-219
- [\[161\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, *The Life Beyond the Veil*, Square Circles Publishing, pp. 226-227
- [\[162\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, *The Life Beyond the Veil*, Square Circles Publishing, p. 227
- [\[163\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, *The Life Beyond the Veil*, Square Circles Publishing, p. 227
- [\[164\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, *The Life Beyond the Veil*, Square Circles Publishing, pp. 227-228
- [\[165\]](#) Owen R. G. *Life Beyond the Veil*, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 364
- [\[166\]](#) Owen R. G. *Life Beyond the Veil*, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 366
- [\[167\]](#) Kardec, A, *The Gospel According to Spiritism*, EDICEI, pp. 386-387
- [\[168\]](#) Kardec, A, *The Gospel According to Spiritism*, EDICEI, p. 388
- [\[169\]](#) Xavier, Francisco C., *Between Heaven and Earth*, EDICEI, p. 13
- [\[170\]](#) Xavier, Francisco C., *Between Heaven and Earth*, EDICEI, p. 14
- [\[171\]](#) Owen R. G. *Life Beyond the Veil*, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 366
- [\[172\]](#) Owen R. G. *Life Beyond the Veil*, Squares Circles Publishing, pp. 366-367
- [\[173\]](#) Owen R. G. *Life Beyond the Veil*, Squares Circles Publishing, pp. 367-368
- [\[174\]](#) Xavier, Francisco C., *In the Realms of Mediumship*, EDICEI, pp. 8-9
- [\[175\]](#) Xavier, Francisco C., *In the Realms of Mediumship*, EDICEI, p. 9
- [\[176\]](#) Pereira, Yvonne A, *Memoirs of a Suicide*, EDICEI, p. 253
- [\[177\]](#) Owen R. G. *Life Beyond the Veil*, Squares Circles Publishing, pp. 447-448
- [\[178\]](#) Owen R. G. *Life Beyond the Veil*, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 448
- [\[179\]](#) Owen R. G. *Life Beyond the Veil*, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 450

[\[180\]](#) Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, pp. 451-452

[\[181\]](#) Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, pp. 452-453

[\[182\]](#) Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, pp. 454-455

[\[183\]](#) Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 456

[\[184\]](#) Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, pp. 458-459

[\[185\]](#) Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 459

[\[186\]](#) Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, pp. 461-462

[\[187\]](#) Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, pp. 464-465

[\[188\]](#) Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, pp. 467-468

[\[189\]](#) Xavier, F. C., Liberation, EDICEI, pp. 71-72

[\[190\]](#) Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, pp. 471-472

[\[191\]](#) Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, pp. 473-475

[\[192\]](#) Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 478

[\[193\]](#) Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, pp. 478-479

[\[194\]](#) Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 497

[\[195\]](#) Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, pp. 497-498

[\[196\]](#) Xavier, F.C. Action and Reaction, EDICEI, p. 33

[\[197\]](#) Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 498

[\[198\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, The Outlands of Heaven, The Greater World Association Trust, pp. 151-152

[\[199\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, The Outlands of Heaven, The Greater World Association Trust, p. 152

[\[200\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, The Outlands of Heaven, The Greater World Association Trust, pp. 152-153

- [201] Owen, G. Vale, The Outlands of Heaven, The Greater World Association Trust, p. 153
- [202] Kardec, A., Genesis – Miracles and Predictions according to Spiritism, International Spiritist Council, p. 417
- [203] Kardec, A., Genesis – Miracles and Predictions according to Spiritism, International Spiritist Council, pp. 416-417
- [204] Owen, G. Vale, The Outlands of Heaven, The Greater World Association Trust, pp. 153-154
- [205] Kardec, Allan, The Spirits Book, White Crow Books, Question 30, p. 71
- [206] Wikipedia, “String Theory”, n.d.,
https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/String_theory, (accessed January 31, 2016)
- [207] Kardec, Allan, The Spirits Book, White Crow Books, Question 36, p. 74
- [208] Kardec, Allan, Genesis – Miracles and Predictions according to Spiritism, EDICEI, pp. 123-124
- [209] Kardec, Allan, Genesis – Miracles and Predictions according to Spiritism, EDICEI, p. 124
- [210] Kardec, Allan, Genesis – Miracles and Predictions according to Spiritism, EDICEI, p. 124
- [211] Kardec, Allan, Genesis – Miracles and Predictions according to Spiritism, EDICEI, p. 125
- [212] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, pp. 122-123
- [213] Kardec, Allan, Genesis – Miracles and Predictions according to Spiritism, EDICEI, p. 115
- [214] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 123
- [215] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 123
- [216] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 124
- [217] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 124
- [218] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 124
- [219] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 125
- [220] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, pp. 127-128
- [221] Xavier, Francisco C. On the Way to the Light, EDICEI, p. 98
- [222] Xavier, Francisco C. On the Way to the Light, EDICEI, p. 102
- [223] Xavier, Francisco C. On the Way to the Light, EDICEI, p. 138
- [224] Xavier, Francisco C. On the Way to the Light, EDICEI, p. 149
- [225] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 128

- [\[226\]](#) Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 128
- [\[227\]](#) Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 129
- [\[228\]](#) Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 130
- [\[229\]](#) Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, pp. 133-134
- [\[230\]](#) Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 132
- [\[231\]](#) Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, pp. 131-132
- [\[232\]](#) Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, pp. 132-133
- [\[233\]](#) Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 133
- [\[234\]](#) Kardec, Allan, Genesis – Miracles and Predictions according to Spiritism, EDICEI, p. 416
- [\[235\]](#) Kardec, Allan, Genesis – Miracles and Predictions according to Spiritism, EDICEI, pp. 416-417
- [\[236\]](#) Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 135
- [\[237\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, The Life Beyond the Veil, Square Circles Publishing, p. 192
- [\[238\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, The Life Beyond the Veil, Square Circles Publishing, p. 192
- [\[239\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, The Life Beyond the Veil, Square Circles Publishing, p. 193
- [\[240\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, The Life Beyond the Veil, Square Circles Publishing, p. 194
- [\[241\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, The Life Beyond the Veil, Square Circles Publishing, p. 194
- [\[242\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, The Life Beyond the Veil, Square Circles Publishing, p. 195
- [\[243\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, The Life Beyond the Veil, Square Circles Publishing, pp. 270-271
- [\[244\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, The Life Beyond the Veil, Square Circles Publishing, pp. 271-272
- [\[245\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, The Life Beyond the Veil, Square Circles Publishing, pp. 272-273
- [\[246\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, The Life Beyond the Veil, Square Circles Publishing, pp. 273-274
- [\[247\]](#) Pereira, Yvonne A., Memoirs of a Suicide, EDICEI, p. 33

[\[248\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, *The Life Beyond the Veil*, Square Circles Publishing, p. 274

[\[249\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, *The Life Beyond the Veil*, Square Circles Publishing, pp. 274-275

[\[250\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, *The Life Beyond the Veil*, Square Circles Publishing, pp. 311-312

[\[251\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, *The Life Beyond the Veil*, Square Circles Publishing, pp. 312-313

[\[252\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, *The Life Beyond the Veil*, Square Circles Publishing, p. 313

[\[253\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, *The Life Beyond the Veil*, Square Circles Publishing, p. 313

[\[254\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, *The Life Beyond the Veil*, Square Circles Publishing, pp. 311-312

[\[255\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, *The Life Beyond the Veil*, Square Circles Publishing, p. 193

[\[256\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, *The Outlands of Heaven*, The Greater World Association Trust, p. 100

[\[257\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, *The Outlands of Heaven*, The Greater World Association Trust, pp. 102-103

[\[258\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, *The Outlands of Heaven*, The Greater World Association Trust, p. 103

[\[259\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, *The Outlands of Heaven*, The Greater World Association Trust, p. 104

[\[260\]](#) Owen, G. Vale, *The Outlands of Heaven*, The Greater World Association Trust, p. 207